Weresylph Dawning
By
Alexander Gordon Jahans

Prologue
A Modest Proposal

October 29th 1997

Two young men are sat opposite each other in a canteen drinking beers as they discuss something.

“Okay, run it by me again, Geoff.” says the shorter fatter man.

His tall good looking friend responds. “Really, Frank? This must be the third time I’ve told you.”

“Well it’s a lot to take in.” says the shorter man.

“Well, alright.” says the pretty man with a sigh. “So there have been disappearances at this university every few months like clockwork. Parents, lecturers, students, catering staff, everyone but with one connection...”

“They were women.” says the shorter man, remembering.

The pretty man nods.

“And you think that they were stolen away by this mythological bogeyman called the Farsh-nuke?” asks the shorter man.

The pretty man nods and sips his beer.

“And the Farsh-nuke is...?” asks the shorter man.

“The eternally reincarnated soul of an eldritch entity in the body of a young man.” replies the pretty man.

“Right, right, and he wanted the women because he could... what? Turn them into his playthings?” asks the shorter man with a dismissive wave of his hand.

“Yes, well no... Actually that’s the Bam-Kursh. The Farsh-nuke turns the women into his pets but it’s more complicated than that.” says the pretty man.

“Ah yes he modifies their genetic code, didn’t you say?” asks the shorter man.

“Not just their genetic code, the entire physics of their being.” says the pretty man excitedly. “He could literally turn them into ageless beauties capable of laying eggs that would hatch out into perfect clones of themselves. They were capable of being milked on demand and liked being carved up while still alive and they healed perfectly.”

“Yeah, this is the part I always struggle with.” says the shorter man.

“And that’s not all because you see there are these other creatures associated with the Farsh-nuke called weresharks and if they infect one of these altered women then the passiveness of the altered women combats the inherent viciousness of the wereshark infection.” says the pretty man.

“And the point is...?” asks the shorter man wearily.

“The point is that the Farsh-nuke is gone, has been for years, but his creations haven’t. Not entirely. The altered women, the sylphs, still exist somewhere out in the world and so do the weresharks. Do you realise the potential that’s out there for whoever is willing to reach out and take it? I mean just take shark fin soup? There’s a whole market out there for fins of sharks. We finds some sylphs, maybe we make some of our own and then we find a wereshark and boom! Infinite ethical shark fins.” says the pretty man.

“Right...” says the short man wearily. “So let me see if I’ve got this right? You want us to find some kidnapped and experimented upon women and convince them to let us keep them as lab specimens? We do this so that - if we can find this monster shark thing - we can infect these traumatised women that we have ‘rescued’, then carve them up on demand to meet orders coming in for sharkfin soup and other bizarre requirements?”

The pretty nods exuberantly.

The shorter man shakes his head “Look, I’m just not sure about the practicality of it. I mean even if we could do all that we’d need so many to meet demand it wouldn’t be a viable business model.”

The pretty man tutts. “We only need one. Once we have one we can reverse engineer how she got that and then we synthesise a replacement catalyst for the conversion, and of course once we have one tame wereshark sylph we can make new weresharks on demand.”

The shorter man stares at his old friends for a moment, sighs, puts his head in his hands then says. “Alright, I’ll work with you on this but if we don’t find a sylph within five years I’m abandoning the project.”

“Deal.” says the pretty man with a big grin on his face.

*

Chapter 1
Sweet Dreams Are Made Of These...

June the 21st 2019

Daniella Hopkins was in a bookshop holding up two different titles by two different authors as she compared the blurbs. She was 22, a healthy average body, blonde and dressed for comfort rather than style.

A woman approached and peered over her shoulder at the blurbs. “Temeriere by Naomi Novik and Consider Phlebas by Iain M Banks, huh?”

“Or.” said Daniella as she turned to address the woman who had interrupted her reverie.

The interrupter was tall, thin beyond what looked healthy and dressed for a day at the beach, not Wolverhampton on a particularly cold summer day.

“Sorry.” said the woman apologetically. “I didn’t mean to pry.”

“I said it’s ‘Or.’” said Daniella pointedly. “As in Temeriere by Naomi Novik OR Consider Phlebas by Iain M Banks. No ‘and’. I don’t have the money for ‘and’.”

“Ah yes, the economy...” said the woman sadly. “In that case I recommend Consider Phlebas. I am all about futurism. In fact let me buy it for you.”

Daniella was stunned, she stared at the woman for a moment then peered around at what counted for the woman’s clothing. “Where do you keep your purse?”

The woman smirked. “Do you honestly think with a body like this that I have to buy for things with my own money?”

Daniella stared as the woman twirled on the spot. A lot of conflicting feelings were running through her mind.

“I’ll be back in a moment.” said the woman.

Daniella watched the woman walk away and found her eyes captivated by the sway of her hips.

The woman approached a tall well built guy with a beard and a check shirt.

The man appeared to listen intently for a moment then looked in Daniella’s direction.

Daniella froze.

The man smiled amiably as dragged the confusing woman along behind him. He introduced himself with a shake of the hand. “Pleased to meet you, I am Matt and this -” He reached out with his left hand and squeezed the bum of the confusing woman. “Pert young thing is Lena. She says she’d like me to buy those books you’re looking at for you. Is that okay?”

Daniella stared at him like a startled deer. “Umm... I... Umm... Er...”

The man chuckled, leaned close to study the covers of the books Daniella was holding then picked a copy of each from the shelves and went to pay for them.

When they were alone together, the woman, Lena, added. “You know we’ve got an open relationship and you’d be quite welcome to-”

“No!” barked Daniella as words finally escaped her brain and cleared the blockage. She frowned and bit her lip before she blushed and placing the books she was holding back on the shelves. “Thank you but no... As tempted as I am, I don’t know you. Either of you.”

“Do you need to?” asked Lena curiously. “Isn’t enough that we are each staggeringly beautiful consenting adults?”

Daniella shook her head sadly. “I need more than just lust, I need an emotional connection. I need trust and understanding.”

“Then lets develop one.” said Lena with a shrug.

Daniella stared at her again. “Pardon?”

“I mean, if you want?” said Lena as she studied Daniella. “I do wear clothes with pockets if you’re worried about Matt coming along. We could meet up, have coffee and explore each other’s

psyches.”

Daniella frowned and bit her lip.

The man, Matt, arrived with the books. “I hope I’m not interrupting anything.”

Lena reached her hand into the back pocket of Matt’s jeans and pulled out his wallet. She looked through it for a moment then pulled out a business card with her name on it and gave it to Daniella. “Think about it.”

Daniella sighed and accepted the books and the cards.

*

August the 12th 2019

Lena was chained to the bed, a ball gag in her mouth, her long ginger hair tied in a ponytail and knotted round the railing at the head of the bed. She was mutely crying with ecstasy as sweat stripped the lube from her body.

Daniella rose naked out of the covers as she crawled up Lena’s body, a condom about her tongue and a look of extreme satisfaction on her face. Daniella removed Lena’s ball gag then peeled the condom from her tongue and tossed it away.

Lena’s lips locked around Daniella’s then after a moment Daniella rolled onto her back and panted.

Lena asked in a very weak voice. “Mistress, may I be allowed to shower?”

Daniella chuckled. “Of course...” She rose from the bed and started to unlock the chains securing Lena to the bed.

Lena wheezed. “Thank you...”

Daniella asked. “Do you think I could meet your boyfriend again?”

Lena nodded as she shook the life back into her left hand. “Would you like me to be there?”

Daniella smirked and kissed Lena’s feet as she freed them. “To begin with but afterwards... Well I am sure we could find some way of keeping you indisposed.”

Lena chuckled. “I think I’d like that.”

“Good...” said Daniella as she untied Lena’s hair from the railing at the head of the bed.

“I’ll let him know tomorrow when he comes to pick me up.” said Lena cheerfully. “Then we can arrange a date.”

“Excellent!” said Daniella as she picked up a remote control. “Now, I’ve got the complete Richard Curtis Rom Com collection, Doctor Who Series 2 and Farscape, what do you want to watch?”

Lena frowned. “Do you have Harry Potter The University Years?”

Daniella stared at her. “I might have to check...”

*

August the 21st 2019

Matt unlocked the door and Daniella led a tipsy Lena into the apartment. They had just had an expensive night out at a fancy restaurant where they prearranged what would happen and as part of the agreement had given Lena alcoholic drink after alcoholic drink until she could now barely stand.

Daniella slammed the door shut behind them as Matt spun to catch Lena.

Lena giggled. “Have fun with her.”

Matt nodded and kissed her gently on the cheek. “I will. Thank you for this.”

Lena nodded. “Well, what are we waiting for?”

Daniella massaged Lena’s neck and whispered. “I’ll try not to be so good that he dumps you.”

Lena laughed.

Daniella kissed Lena’s neck then pulled the zip on the back of her dress down before she slid the dress down the young woman’s body entirely.

Matt grabbed a ball gag and silenced Lena’s laughing.

Daniella pulled the chain off her handbag and bound Lena’s feet together at the ankles.

Matt applied a blindfold around Lena’s head.

Daniella yanked Lena’s hands behind her back and cuffed them together.

Lena mewled with satisfaction.

Matt opened the door to the broom cupboard.

Daniella cleared Lena’s dress from about her feet.

Matt nodded to Daniella and together they carried Lena into the broom cupboard.

As the door closed Daniella found herself looking up at Matt in nervous anticipation.

Matt smiled a wide toothy grin.

Daniella grinned. “So umm...?”

Matt was upon her in a moment. He tore at her clothes as his lips locked with hers. He guided her to the sofa as he undressed her.

Daniella went gladly with him, her body alight with excitement and ecstasy. Then his lips started travelling southward. She grinned and found herself moaning with pleasure. Then he bound her feet together with chain. Daniella shivered with excitement. For this man and this man alone she would give herself entirely. His strong hands turned her over and cuffed her wrists together.

Matt chuckled. “Stupid bitch.”

Daniella giggled. “Oh, Master, I have been stupid. Punish me, please.”

Matt laughed and forced a ball gag into Daniella’s mouth before he blindfolded her.

Daniella thought this was all part of the play but then she felt the needle enter her vein and lost consciousness.

*

Chapter 2
Well, Fuck...

August the 22nd 2019 - Probably

Daniella woke up to darkness. She was cold and she couldn’t move. She couldn’t see and couldn’t shout but – Yes.- she noticed there was the distant sound of rumbling like an engine. She was being moved. Not good.

Suddenly she was blinded by light until a woman came into vision. Her skin was so dark that Daniella almost thought she was just seeing a silhouette but then... no. Now Daniella could see that the woman before her was naked and very beautiful. In fact almost overpoweringly so. Daniella found herself falling in love with this woman.

“I’m Magpie.” said the new love of Daniella’s life. “I learned a few tricks while I was young and I don’t intend to stick around. Neither should you. Free the others. Get out, get to safety.”

Daniella nodded. The words had incredible meaning for her.

Magpie reached over and started to unlock the bonds about Daniella. “If something happens and you can’t get out like I can, play along with what they want from you and play dumb. They must think we’re all fools for ending up in this situation. Let them, it may keep you alive.”

Daniella nodded. “As you wish, Mistress.”

“Magpie.” corrected Magpie as she handed the keys and bindings to Daniella.

“As you wish, Mistress Magpie.” said Daniella.

Magpie smirked and looked Daniella over. “Maybe when we’re all safely out of here. Now go, free the others.”

Daniella nodded.

Magpie left the room silently.

Daniella blinked. Her head was swimming with all sorts of strange thoughts and feelings. She slapped herself and forced herself to focus. She was in a small dimly lit room and the ground was unstable beneath her feet. She saw that there were in fact cages filled with naked and bound women. Daniella saw that one door hung open and inside were two other blonde women. She rushed to them.

The first woman was called Lisa and she seemed weirdly in love with Daniella. The next was called Lucy and she was likewise in love. The three of them set about freeing the other women, always remembering of course to carry their bindings around in the sacks that had been placed about their heads in case they needed them again.

There were nearly ninety women in those cages but eventually all were freed. Daniella led the way out of where they had been caged and they started exploring the ship. Unfortunately something became quickly apparent the further they got from their cages. Something that was confirmed when they came to a window and saw that they were travelling at some speed many miles above the ocean. They were stuck on a cargo plane and couldn't escape. So back to the cages it was.

There was of course a catch as the captured women donned their bindings. Someone would have to go without and hope that wasn't noticed.

Daniella tried her best to finish the job properly by locking the door when everybody was back in their cages and refrained from binding Lisa's hands until Lisa had secured the blindfold and hood about her head but it wasn't going to be perfect.

Then the waiting began.

*

August the 23rd 2019 - Probably.

Daniella was woken up by shouting and the sound of footsteps. Keys rattled in locks and doors were flung open as strong arms pulled her out of the cage and tossed her to the floor. She felt herself suffocate as Lisa, Lucy and many others were tossed on top of her.

The squeaks of wheels close by to Daniella suggested they were being moved and sure enough she felt strong arms lift her up then they tossed her into some bizarre coffin like thing. She lay there, muffled sounds of machinery filling her ears, until suddenly the sound became louder and clearer and the hood and blindfold were removed.

A man in his thirties wore a three piece suit and smiled at her.

Daniella tried to move her head but she couldn't. She was held looking right at the strange man for a good half a minute before he nodded and the blindfold was replaced.

The sound however stayed unmuffled as a needle was inserted into her neck. As soon as it was removed the sound become muffled again.

Chapter 3
Distracted By The Sexy

*

August the 24th 2019 - Maybe

Daniella was almost blinded as the blindfold was removed again and she saw that she was just one of a hundred women watching the strange man she had been forced to look at earlier.

The man seemed to enjoy the attention but this was also clearly something he was used to. "Ladies, my name is Geoff Raspberry and I know why you're all here.-"

Daniella felt distinctly irritated by the ball gag in her mouth that prevented her from heckling.

“You’re here because you wanted to be loved, cared for and commanded. Here at Raspberry Ripples we strive to care for our investments in just such a way.” said the strange man. His voice was carried across to her by speakers in the box. “You see you are investments, all of you. We could just have kidnapped whoever was needed off the street but we chose to seduce you, to encourage you to consent because if you consent we will be gentle and loving. You all belong to me now and I love you, all of you. Enjoy your new lives my little lambs.”

Then the lids were replaced on the coffins.

When the lid was next removed, a young brunette in a high vis jacket stood apologetically before her. “Hi, I’m Artemis. I’m sorry about all you’ve been through but I promise it gets easier from here.”

Daniella glared at her.

“Now, do you promise to be nice and not to scream?” asked Artemis.

Daniella nodded.

Artemis removed the ball gag from Daniella’s mouth.

“Fuck you.” said Daniella bitterly.

“That’s fair.” said Artemis then she smiled sadly. “We could be friends if you wanted?”

Daniella stared at her. “What fucking planet are you-”

Artemis gently stroked Daniella’s hair and Daniella found herself overwhelmed with orgasmic love and pleasure.

“I’ll repeat that shall I?” said Artemis gently. “I could look out for you and we could have a lot of fun together but only if you let me.”

Daniella swallowed as she remembered Magpie’s advice to play dumb. She nodded.

“Good girl.” said Artemis as she stroked Daniella once more.

Daniella let herself relax and enjoy the sensation. The pleasure was a much needed break from the bad day. She almost didn’t notice the coffin like thing as it opened up and Artemis coaxed her out so she could undo the restraints.

“There... Does that feel better?” asked Artemis with a warm smile.

Daniella stood naked before the strange woman in the middle of fuck knows what but without information there was nothing she could do so she smiled weakly.

Artemis nodded. “Feels scary doesn’t it?”

Daniella nodded.

Artemis hugged Daniella then grabbed her by the hand. “Well how about we get you cleaned up and grab you some clothes then I can explain.”

Daniella tried to smile.

Artemis beamed and started to lead the way.

*

August the 24th - Still?

Daniella stepped out of the shower.

Artemis wrapped her in a large warm towel then dried her vigorously.

“Why are you doing this?” asked Daniella, she was careful to seem more shell shocked and unthinking than carefully probing.

“Drying you?” asked Artemis absent mindedly.

“Being nice to me?” asked Daniella, she tried her best to sound pathetic, small and scared. Not exactly a hard act at the moment.

“Because you’re cute.” said Artemis with a smile. “And because I know what you’re going through.”

“Really?” asked Daniella, she tried to sound shy and nervous, not like someone identifying an exploitable weakness.

Artemis nodded. “I’ve seen a lot of girls like you and I know what you’re going through. If you’d like me to explain?”

Daniella nodded.

Artemis finished drying her then presented her with a bikini.

Daniella stared at it.

Artemis sighed and dressed Daniella. “You are a sylph. I mean you are now. That was what the injection was about. You’re a kind of exotic pet and the first face you set eyes upon is what you regard as your master or mistress. That’s what all the palaver with the blindfolds was for. To ensure you would obey Geoff Raspberry.”

Daniella stared at her. “I’m a pet?”

Artemis nodded and stroked Daniella as if by way of proof.

Daniella moaned with pleasure then frowned.

“What’s your name, girl?” asked Artemis.

“Dany.” said Daniella. “Why?”

Artemis smiled then went to a machine and typed away on a keyboard. “I knew a Danny once... It’s a nice name.”

Daniella stared at Artemis.

There was a bleep then Artemis pulled something out of it and returned to Daniella. “This is so the other wardens will know that you’re a friend of mine.”

Daniella accepted the strip of leather emblazoned with the words:

Dany

Property of Artemis and the Great Geoff

Daniella smiled weakly. “It’s umm, nice.”

Artemis chuckled and secured the collar round Daniella’s neck. “It’ll take some time to get used to, I know, but I am here for you. Should you want me to be.”

Daniella nodded.

Artemis smiled and started to stroke Daniella. At first she just ran her hands through Daniella’s long blonde hair but then her hands started wandering farther and farther down her back.

Daniella felt the weight of the long day spent restrained and uncomfortable pour down upon her. Tiredness washed over her like a hot shower. Here was Artemis, this strange and wise woman who seemed to care for Daniella. She made Daniella feel things she wasn’t sure she was capable of feeling before. This wasn’t lust, nor romantic love. This was something more... Pure. This was trust. Pure instinctual trust. A feeling of warmth and safety that could only vaguely be compared to christmasses at her nan’s when she’d been overstuffed with sweets and fell asleep before the roaring fire.

Dimly Daniella was aware that she was led to a sofa and pulled her legs up onto it so she could lie on all fours across Artemis’s lap.

Artemis muttered kind words quietly as she stroked Daniella.

There was something else, something just faintly on the edge of Daniella’s hearing. It was like a hum, a deep irregular hum, like an animal would make. It reminded her of something, something from home and her childhood. The more she heard it and the more Artemis stroked her, the more Daniella was brought back to memories of those long gone christmasses when it seemed everything would be okay, because even if it wasn’t - If her jumper got a hole in it or the TV was boring - there Bootsy would be. She was this great black moggie cat and Daniella could swear Bootsy knew when she was upset because she’d go over to her and curl up beside her, purring this great guttural lullaby. A lullaby that Daniella heard now. She smiled and felt herself slip away into a deep rejuvenating sleep.

*

August the 25th 2019

Daniella woke up to the smell of frying bacon and eggs then saw she was curled into a ball at the foot of a double bed. She stretched out and went in search of a bathroom to clean her teeth and have a morning shower. She considered taking some of Artemis’s clothes before she remembered Magpie’s advice to play dumb so she put the bikini back on and went in search of the smell.

Artemis was wearing a piny over her uniform as she cooked what looked like almost a banquet. Fried eggs, bacon, sausages, hash browns, mushrooms, tomatoes, baked beans, even black puddings. There were large pitchers of milk and orange juice and a huge kettle of tea.

Daniella stared at the food as she suddenly felt very hungry indeed.

Artemis removed some toast from under the grill and plated it up. She noticed Daniella as she did so. “Hey, Dany, welcome back to the land of the sapient. Must be quite a shock, coming to after your first bliss out.”

Daniella blinked and shook her head. She walked forward to take a seat at the kitchen table. “What? Sorry? It must be the morning or something because I didn’t understand a word of that.”

Artemis chuckled as she buttered the toast. “Nah, you’re doing great. This is all just new to you, that’s all.”

“New to what?” asked Daniella. Her brain was somewhat distracted by the array of food before her.

Artemis removed the piny and washed her hands before she leaned over the table and caressed Daniella’s left cheek. “You’re a sylph. A pet. Sometimes you’re you as you are now - A beautiful, smart, strong willed woman - and sometimes, when you’re with the right person and being tret just the right way, you are an adorable daft puppy of a girl.”

“You mean I changed?” asked Daniella.

Artemis nodded and smiled at the memory. “I watched it happen. I made it happen. This majestic and mighty woman transformed before my eyes to a playful puppy. That’s why I gave you the collar, so I could leash you if I had to.”

Daniella swallowed and frowned. “So that’s why I woke up at the foot of your bed?”

Artemis nodded again. “Also why you might not be feeling so good this morning. You were a very hungry pup last night and the beast has rather different dietary tastes. It can be a bit difficult adjusting to the fact your stomach contains food you wouldn’t eat as you are now.”

Daniella groaned. “What did I eat?”

Artemis chuckled. “As if I’m going to tell you that and put you off your breakfast. What matters is you loved it at the time and I’ve got more for the next time we meet.”

Daniella stared at her nervously. “Next time?”

“You didn’t seriously think this was it, did you?” asked Artemis. “Because I can assure you I did not have you kidnapped so you could be my pet girl. No, I did this because I’m kind and I like you but there is only so much I can do and after breakfast you need to rejoin the other sylphs.”

Daniella glared at her as her mind raced.

Artemis sighed. “I know what you’re thinking but it won’t work. I mean you’re welcome to try and I think there’s some rope you could bind me with before dumping me in the chest freezer but it won’t make a difference.”

Daniella was silent for a long moment, disdain evident on her face.

Artemis leaned close to Daniella and looked her in the eyes as she said slowly. “You were bought here for a reason and I intend to help you fulfil that reason. I don’t want to hurt you but we each have roles we must play and you are going to need your strength.”

“What are they going to do to me?” asked Daniella suddenly as her eyes bored into Artemis’s soul.

“It’s better if you don’t know.” said Artemis.

“Bullshit.” said Daniella curtly.

Artemis grimaced. “If I tell you then you need to know that if you don’t calmly accept it things will be much much worse.”

“How?” asked Daniella.

“They didn’t just turn you into a sylph. That was just the first injection.” said Artemis bitterly. “The second turns you into a great and terrifying beast so savage that the only way it can be tamed is be tempering it with a sylph’s innate submissiveness and obedience. They know the power you have, they know just how much damage your body can withstand. The only way they can do what they do is because the sylphs willingly accept it, so if you don’t then you present a dangerous virus that must be eradicated with extreme prejudice. I care too much about you to let that happen.”

“But I take it I can assume it won’t be pleasant?” asked Daniella irritably.

Artemis gritted her teeth then grimaced. “More pleasant than the alternative. Much much more pleasant.”

“And you’d help me if you could?” asked Daniella.

“In a heartbeat.” said Artemis earnestly.

“Then I thank you for the food because it looks like I’m going to need my strength.” said Daniella bitterly.

Artemis smiled sadly then ran a hand through Daniella’s hair again.

Daniella glared at her.

Artemis sighed and pulled up a chair to sit opposite her.

*

Chapter 4
Don’t Fear The Reaper

August the 25th 2019 - An Hour Later.

Artemis stood with Daniella before a large metal shutter that was slowly chunking upwards. There was a leash in Artemis’s left hand that was secured to the collar round Daniella’s neck.

“Now, remember: Walk don’t run.” said Artemis. “If they know they can take you out easily they’re less likely to fire.”

Daniella nodded. “Thanks, I guess.”

“There are going to be queues before machinery when I unleash you. You join one and do exactly as the video screens instruct, understand?” said Artemis.

Daniella muttered in frustration. “I could be walking to my death.”

“Yes, and your very survival depends upon your willingness to.” said Artemis.

Daniella groaned. “Fine, fine. But if I do die I am going to haunt you so bad.”

Artemis nodded. “I would expect nothing less.”

The shutter finished rolling upwards and Daniella could see out into a vast complex with masked people in armour and carrying large guns watching a hundred naked women as they queued up before metal gates.

“Tad overkill don’t you think?” said Daniella.

Artemis laughed as she watched the other guards carefully. “Actually there’s been cutbacks. There should be more, a lot more. You’ll learn why soon.”

Then Artemis grabbed Daniella’s face in her hands and snogged her. Artemis unleashed Daniella then patted her bum to encourage her to walk forward.

Daniella stumbled then looked back at Artemis in confusion before she headed to join the back of the nearest queue.

Artemis stepped back through the shutter as it shunked swiftly close.

Daniella walked carefully as she noted the layout of the complex and the patterns of the guards. Clearly years of playing Assassin’s Creed games had rubbed off on her. She almost felt like she was blending in when she joined the queue as a result, not actually queuing for god knows what kind of unpleasantness.

Then the queue started moving. One body at a time every thirty seconds like clockwork. She counted it out with her left hand doing groups of five and her right noting the groups. Twenty six onward was indicated by touching her nose.

As the queue neared the end Daniella noticed that there was a black curtain dividing the queue.

Then she saw why as she crossed the curtain.

There was a spotlight in the ceiling that shone down on Daniella as an LCD screen swung out from the side to show a video of the guy she had been forced to stare at earlier:

Greetings, my little lamb, welcome to your orientation session.
I am your lord and master, Geoff, and as you should know already I see you as an investment.
Why are you an investment? Because you can heal in ways science does not fully understand.

That means you can be slaughtered for your lovely hair and limbs without actually killing you or ruining the chance of another harvest so if you'll just step through the doorway we can see about that first harvest.

The screen swung to the side and an arrow lit up in the floor.

Daniella walked forwards as she remembered Artemis's words.

A tall white clean shaven man in wipe clean overalls that were spattered in blood stood waiting for Daniella. There were a number of conveyor belts, labelled from left to right: Investments. Hair. Brain. Eyes. Teeth. Left arm. Right arm. Left leg. Right leg.

Daniella farted but couldn't honestly be sure it was just a fart.

The tall man placed a gloved hand about her jowls and started inspecting her with a professional eye as his other hand readied a knife. Then he noticed her collar and hissed in her ear. "Anybody behind you?"

"No..." said Daniella nervously.

The tall man chuckled, placed the knife down and patted Daniella on the back companionably but with such force that she fell forward and had to catch herself. "So you're one of Artemis's, yeah?"

Daniella nodded. "Is that a problem?"

"Nah man, Artemis's a mate." said the tall man. He stretched out a hand. "The name's Jake by the way. Jake Snyder, pleased to meet you."

Daniella stared at him then looked around the place as if to confirm. Man in bloody overalls with knife, clearly labelled conveyor belts and her - under instructions to be harvested as an 'Investment'.

"Ah..." said Jake as he noted her reaction. "No, I get you. I am going to slaughter you. I mean just to be clear that is what's going to happen, but I like Artemis and that means I like you. So we aren't going to do this like a cold assembly line job. Or disassembly line job I suppose. I always try to be quick and painless but for you I can be something more. I can be a friend."

Daniella just stared at him.

"I know, I know... It sounds daft right but the reaper is the greatest friend you can ever have in here." said Jake gently "Because one way or another you are going to get slaughtered a lot and me, I see this as a job, just a job. So I do it to the best of my abilities but there are some men who don't need to be paid, who don't just see this as a job. The reaper man decides how much pain you go through, how quick you heal and how long it takes. You want your reaper man to be your friend, believe me."

Daniella snapped. "So what? You want me to be fucking grateful, is that it? Maybe you want me to suck your cock and call you Sir as you dismember me?"

"No..." said Jake, genuinely upset by the suggestion. "No. I'm not like those cunts but they do exist and because you belong to a friend, a friend who has helped me become a lot more humane in what I do, I will try very hard to see that I or someone I trust not to be a cunt slaughters you in future."

Daniella fell silent as she looked at him warily.

Jake nodded. “Yeah, sorry.”

Daniella swallowed. “Just get it over with, yeah? I take what you mean but I don’t like this and I don’t want to be here and it is taking all the strength I have not to just turn and run or else curl up into a ball and never stop screaming.”

Jake frowned. “Fair enough. Close your eyes and count to ten.”

So Daniella closed her eyes.

“One elephant.”

Jake picked up the knife.

“Two elephant.”

Off came Daniella’s left arm.

“Three elephant.”

Off came her right arm.

“Four elephant.”

Off came her scalp.

“Five elephant.”

Off came the top of her skull.

“Six eleph-”

*

Chapter 5
Swimming Lessons

August the 25th 2019 - Presumably

Daniella woke up naked in a cage. As she looked for a way out she noticed there were barrels attached to one side and here her bikini and collar had been tied, except she noticed something attached to her bikini. A piece of cloth was attached that read:

Dany,
I know you’re scared so here’s some advice.
Don’t panic.
You can breathe underwater.
Jake.

Daniella stared at the note in confusion for a moment until a klaxon sounded, hydraulics started up and her cage was lowered deep underwater.

Daniella searched frantically for a way out. She even considered if she could somehow cut herself up so she could fit through the bars.

Then she heard the screams.

Daniella had been so fixated on her own predicament she hadn't stopped to consider the others but now she did she could see a hundred cages each filled with naked women who were desperately screaming as they drowned. Then the screams got worse as Daniella started to hear the sound of metal being torn apart. The sound was getting closer, like a wave of panic.

Daniella stared at the bikini, collar and note, reminders of the two people since this mess began who had actually done what they could to help her. She remembered their faith that she would survive and fuck it, even if she didn't, it was better to have a quick death. So Daniella drank the water in, drank until she choked then drank more.

She felt herself give into something. A huge wall of pain hit her as her lungs collapsed, her skin burst and her bones shattered. She felt herself swelling up, ballooning in size until the metal cage burst open around her. As the cage rose to the surface Daniella felt it leave like a finger dragged up her back.

There was a woman before her. A small asian woman. She was panicking as she was trapped inside her cage and started to suffocate. As Daniella watched, the woman's body grew in size and her arms retracted into fins as her legs and feet fused to form a tail, skin replaced by fine grey scales until she grew so large that her cage popped and floated to the surface.

Daniella tried to swim away and that's when she noticed her own lack of arms and legs but there was sensation. Not much but as Daniella studied the transformed woman before her, she began to understand it. She had no arms but she did have fins to steer and if she kicked her tail...

Daniella glided beside the transformed woman and tried to smile.

The transformed woman promptly opened her mouth so wide she could swallow a man whole before utterly failing to swim away.

Daniella nuzzled her gently with the side of her head then waved her left fin and gave her tail a gentle kick to help the transformed woman figure swimming out.

The transformed woman wiggled her fins and kicked her tail then she smiled at Daniella.

Now Daniella understood why she had tried to scream when Daniella had tried to smile at her.

Daniella swam underwater as she studied where they were. A vast concrete pool lined with pipes for filtration and maintenance systems. Then she swam to where her cage lay floating on the surface of the water.

Her friend joined her and poking her own head out of the water.

A masked guard from a nearby railing pointed its gun at her. "You there, get away from the cage."

Her friend slunk away into the depths.

Daniella smiled.

The guard was panicking now. “I said get away from the fucking cage!”

Daniella retreated back under the water but she had a plan. See, she’d noticed how the transformation had started once the body needed to adapt and she remembered what Artemis had told her, that the guards were terrified because of the power of the beast Daniella could become. Except a shark wasn’t really dangerous. Not if you were smart about where you built your evil base anyway and a naked woman couldn’t exactly do much against armed guards, even if she could heal. So that meant the guard was afraid because of something else, something that Daniella really wanted to know about and thanks to that idiot and years of playing underwater levels in games she knew just how to find out.

Daniella breached the surface and belly flopped on top of the cage.

The guard cried out. “Stupid bitch!” Then he fired at her.

Daniella wasn’t exactly scared given recent events so instead she waited for her lungs and limbs to grow back then she got to her feet and reached out to the guard with now huge, clawed, furry hands, removed his gun and tossed it into the water. “Oh? I’m the stupid one? Fucking really?”

It occurred to Daniella that her voice was deeper than she was used to.

She looked at her reflection in the otherwise still water and saw an eight foot tall monstrosity with huge arms and legs terminating in furry claws, a three foot long shark’s tail covered partly in fur, a dorsal fin and a mouth that was large enough to be a Great White Shark’s but with the expressiveness of a human, the nose was a wolf’s and whiskers poked out beneath the nose but before the upper lip. A kind of hybrid between wolf and human eyes were set back along the side of the head but with the capability of looking straight forward comfortably. Long blonde hair cascaded down her monstrous back and breasts so large they would be comical if not for the mass of muscles, scales and fur completed the picture.

Daniella vomited and watched her reflection shrink back to human with the horror of the monster she had become.

Daniella lay on the wreck of the cage and shivering in disgust as bullets rained down upon her for a moment then a deep voice boomed. “Stop shooting for fuck’s sake!”

There was the sound of swift footsteps on a gantry as the voice cried again. “Can’t you see she’s scared!? She’s not going to harm anyone! Fucking give me that!”

Daniella looked up as a short overweight balding man in a lab coat dismissed guards on the nearby gantry.

The man looked down at her and sighed. “I’m sorry. I really am.”

Daniella scowled. “You turned me into that- That thing! And you hurt me! You hurt me and you kidnapped me and you turned me into that! Why!? Fucking why!?”

“To make money.” said the man with a shrug.

Daniella glared at him. “Is that all I am to you?”

“At the end of the day, yes.” said the man. “The Simulated Brain Project pays good money for brains. People always want wigs made from real human hair and eyes and teeth so often need to be replaced but there’s something else, something that needs you to be able to transform.”

Daniella stared at him and shrugged. “Well I don’t fucking know do I?”

“The fin. All of that was for the fin.” said the man.

“Oh...” said Daniella.

“I’m Frank by the way. Frank Corman.” said the man. “I am co-founder of this business so you can blame me for everything that happens to you here. I am genuinely sorry for everything that has happened to you.”

“So can I go free?” asked Daniella.

“No...” said Frank, warily.

“Worth a try...” said Daniella.

Frank snorted. “Why did you get on the cage?”

“Because that prick told me to get away from it.” said Daniella.

“Then why did you get close to this cage in the first place?” asked Frank

Daniella shrugged and started untying her bikini and collar from the wreck of the cage. “Because there were things that were given to me, nice things from nice people, I didn’t want to lose them.”

Frank nodded as he understood. “Okay then... Why don’t you take those things with you as you swim along to the next part of the harvest. I’ll make sure they take good care of your belongings and return them to you when you recover.”

Daniella almost laughed. “Why the fuck do you think I would ever trust you?”

“Because I’m a man of my word and I have never lied to you. The fact my employees have doesn’t invalidate that.” said Frank, then he sighed, looked around, shrugged and said. “More seriously though you could have killed one of my employees just now and you chose not to. I am not the kind of man to ignore the significance of such decisions. I could operate this project through terror but I find respect and mutual understanding to be far more effective.”

Daniella got to her feet so she was almost eye to eye with the squatting man. “Do you really mean that?”

Frank nodded. “Aye. Doesn’t mean I won’t kill you if I have to and it certainly does not mean that I am not about to slaughter you whenever it is convenient but if you continue to make choices like that then I shall do what I can to make the time you aren’t being slaughtered just a little more pleasurable. I don’t want a revolution if I can help it.”

Daniella nodded. “Okay, I’ll trust you but don’t make me regret it.”

“I won’t.” said Frank, then he studied the pool for a moment as if thinking of what he would say next before he stood up and cried. “Now go on! Get! The sooner you’re harvested, the sooner you can rest!”

Daniella sighed, picked up her bikini and collar then jumped into the water.

A huge shark loomed out of the darkness, teeth bared.

For a moment Daniella was scared but then the shark slowed to a near stop beside her and wiggled its fin at her. Daniella realised she recognised the shark as her friend from earlier and realised she was smiling. She’d waited for her. Daniella grabbed hold of the shark’s fin and let herself be dragged along underwater.

The shark swam through an underwater entrance into a shallow bay area.

A man in overalls rushed forward to drag Daniella away from her friend as two men with very sharp knives removed the dorsal fin, pectoral fins, tail and jaws before starting up a conveyor belt that carried her into the next room. The two men then turned their eyes on Daniella.

The first man asked. “Isn’t she in the wrong department?”

The second man added. “I’m a marine biologist, I was not trained to slaughter women.”

Daniella smiled awkwardly, then looked to the man who’d dragged her away from her friend. He smiled and stroked her hair. “This one caused a bit of a stir back in one of the earlier departments but because of her good behaviour the boss has given her permission to turn up inappropriately formed so she might see that items she cares about won’t get lost.”

The first man shrugged. “Fair enough.”

The second man added. “But what do we do though? I only work with fish.”

“Oh she is a fish.” said the man holding Daniella. He put his hands over the hand she held her bikini and collar in. “Are these the items you want kept safe, madam?”

Daniella nodded.

The man took the items and placed them carefully on a shelf then he fetched a hose and turned on the tap.

Daniella started backing away. “Oh... No... No, no, no... No, thank you...”

The first man looked her in the eye. “Good behaviour, yeah?”

Daniella grimaced and groaned.

The man with the hose reached out for her neck and shoved the hose down her throat.

As the water filled her lungs Daniella screamed soundlessly.

The man with the hose forced her nostrils shut then pulled her, belly first, onto the conveyor.

As Daniella transformed, the man with the hose flung himself backwards.

The hose was removed from Daniella's mouth and the men who'd carved up her friend carved her up with equal efficiency before the conveyor belt carried her through into the next room.

Chapter 6
As First Impressions Go...

Daniella idly wondered what would be next. Perhaps they'd extract her liver or harvest her ovaries. Maybe they'd just burn her alive as fuel? After all wasn't oil just the compressed remains of ancient fish? Then she felt herself suffocating again. Typical. Fucking typical.

Daniella lay still for a moment, not bothering to open her eyes.

"You were awesome by the way." said a soft female voice in her ear.

Daniella opened her eyes and looked up at a beautiful short Asian lady. "Hi, do I...?"

"We were sharks together back there, remember?" she said. "You taught me to swim."

Daniella sat up and hugged her. "Sorry, I didn't recognise you. I'm Daniella Hopkins."

"Riksu Sato" said her new friend.

Daniella ran her hand through Riksu's hair.

Riksu moaned. "Later..."

"Okay..." said Daniella and she got to her feet.

Riksu gasped and Daniella felt something touch her bum.

Daniella turned to look suspiciously at Riksu.

"Sorry..." said Riksu as she got to her feet.

"Lets go through the next part together, shall we?" asked Daniella.

Riksu nodded and grabbed her hand. "Yes..."

They walked down the corridor together and up a set of stairs to a room humming with machinery.

A screen played a video as they opened the doors:

Hello again, my little lambs,
It's Geoff Raspberry once more.
Now I know you must be very tired and deeply sick of me right now.
That is only to be expected.
This is all new to you.
In time you'll get so used to it, it bores you but for now there is screaming and tears.
I am sorry.
There is one last stage before you may relax however.

Welcome to my milking machine!
Please attach the pumps to your breasts and climb into the arm and leg slots provided then you will be delivered to your final destination.

Riksu groaned. “I hate that guy.”

Daniella snorted.

They approached the machinery. It appeared to be a succession of individual milking units on rails that were activated by big green go buttons.

Daniella pulled the suction cups out of her unit and attached them to her breasts then, using hand rails attached to the unit she slotted first her left leg into its hole, then her right leg, left arm and right arm into their holes.

Riksu was having considerably more trouble climbing inside the contraption but eventually she managed it and they head butted the go buttons.

The units started shooting along the rails as bars inside the arm and leg holes tightened about them to keep them in place. What filled Daniella’s mind most though was the force of the suction cups. She looked across at Riksu and saw that she wasn’t fairing much better.

Daniella sighed and let herself be overwhelmed by the pain and tiredness. She couldn’t quite pass out but she did start fading in and out of reality. Memories of Lena came back to her, she imagined herself and Artemis in similar positions, herself and Riksu... Daniella looked across at Riksu in a half hallucinatory daze, just in time to watch Riksu plummet without her arms and legs.

Riksu’s scream reached Daniella as Daniella felt the suction cups let go then diamond tipped titanium cutting blades sliced through her arms and legs where they entered the machinery. Momentum carried Daniella as she fell to land elsewhere along a strip of deep water.

Daniella hung motionless in the water for a moment as she processed what had happened, then she stretched out the stumps of her arms and legs to float atop the water.

A couple of naked blonde women ran forward to carry her out of the water.

Daniella cried “Riksu!”

They nodded to a Chinese woman and a Japanese woman who waded in after her.

“What the fuck?” muttered Daniella slowly.

Daniella was being carried backwards through some kind of great hall that stank of meat, sweat and ale. She was laid on a table and the women sat down on benches by her.

A woman that sounded TV American said. “I hope you’re not planning to eat her.”

“Oh we’re going to have a spit roast and carve her up as she spins actually.” said someone close to her irritably.

Another chimed in meekly. “She’s our friend, of course, we’re not going to eat her.”

The irritated voice called. “Hey, give us that mead, and that saveloy!”

The meek one ask. “Could we please have a bit of your cake for our friend?”

The American chimed in again. “Well I suppose you’re going to want to stuff her if you’re going through with the roast.”

Daniella turned to sound of the American and sneered. “Listen, unless you want me to pop your smart mouth like it’s a balloon you’ll shut the fuck up.”

The American said disdainfully. “That doesn’t even make sense.”

The irritated one said. “Oh it makes sense, you just don’t wanna see how.”

The meek one said. “I’ve got some cake for you, Dany.”

Daniella grinned and looked at her. “Thank you... Lisa, wasn’t it?”

The meek one nodded and tore off a bit of cake so Daniella could eat it.

Daniella accepted the cake with an open mouth and ate it gladly.

The irritated one said. “Right, I’ve got you half a saveloy and a mug of mead.”

Daniella opened her mouth and the irritated one dropped the saveloy in her mouth.

Once she’d eaten the saveloy Daniella turned to look at the irritated one. “Lucy?”

The irritated one nodded then said. “Now, I don’t want to drown you but I don’t think I can pour just a little.”

Daniella chuckled. “Pour it.”

So Lucy poured the mead into Daniella’s mouth until it overflowed.

Daniella drank greedily and found herself relaxing. She was with friends, there was good food and she was not being dismembered, drowned or otherwise hurt. There was laughter in the air and a note of careless joy about proceedings. She chuckled and that chuckling grew into hearty laughter then choking and manic screeching. Her life had been so utterly fucked up that lying half drowned in a room full of naked people with her arms and legs removed felt nice.

Then the tone shifted. The laughter became more muted, the loud joyful discussions became hushed whispers and then the light itself seemed to fade. “Hello, Dany, I hear you tried to orchestrate an escape attempt.”

Daniella winced. She expected a blow to the face. Instead she heard Lucy say. “Yes... She did... What’s wrong with that?”

“What’s wrong-!” boomed the new voice as the sound of choking started to be heard. “Is that I am Queen of this here Valhalla and I want my vikings to remain in Valhalla!”

“What if people want to go home though?” asked Lisa.

There was the sound of chuckling then the new voice screamed. “Then they can take the permanent escape route and die!”

Daniella growled. “Your problem is with me!”

More chuckling then slap, thud, crunch. “My problem is a cancer and I will wipe every last cell of it out!”

The American chimed in. “Oh come on! She’s right here! You want to kill her, go ahead, noone is going to stop you. I mean look at her. She’s half dead already.”

A hand reached out and pulled the American over the table but her neck. “We’re in Valhalla, half dead is still dangerous...”

Daniella watched as two fingers drove slowly through the American’s eyeballs before she was tossed backwards off the bench.

Daniella cried. “She was on your side!”

The light went out again but now Daniella saw why.

She was a giant of a woman rippling with muscles and her long curly hair was like a cloak of power. “Tell me, oh benevolent rescuer, do you want to die?”

Daniella sighed. It had been a very long day. “Well...”

“She belongs to me!” cried a voice suddenly.

The light reappeared as the mountain of a woman turned to the sound. “Artemis, my dear! How is the grand master!? Keeping you well, I hope!? I was just offering this one the same proposition I gave you ten years ago!”

“She lives!” came the reply.

“And how convenient, that you should arrive just as she was about to answer the question?” said the mountainous woman with dark chuckle.

“No coincidence. I was ordered to bring her her belongings by our mutual Master.” came the bitter reply.

The mountainous woman’s bravado seemed to falter. “Belongings?”

“Yes, belongings.” came the reply.

The mountainous woman seemed almost upset for a moment. “Why didn’t I get any belongings?”

Chuckling again but this was different, lighter. “Really? Queen of Valhalla and you still haven’t figured it out? Clothes and belongings aren’t banned. It’s just that the constant dismemberments make clothes inconvenient and of course the grand masters aren’t going to spend money on such things when they know you don’t need them.”

The mountainous woman said. “Well that’s as good as a ban.”

The chuckling again.

“Well it is.” said the mountainous woman.

“Nope.” More chuckling.

“How?” asked the mountainous woman, almost pleading.

“You’re Queen of Valhalla.” came the simple reply before she leaned over Daniella.

Daniella grinned. “Artemis, you came for me.”

“On my master’s orders.” said Artemis pointedly and she scooped Daniella up in her arms before she carried her out of the mead hall.

Artemis carried Daniella through a maze of corridors and secret doors before she lay her down on her double bed.

Artemis went off to fetch some things and left Daniella alone in the room.

Chapter 7
A Chance To Breathe

It occurred to Daniella that she could try to escape, her arms and legs had healed a lot by now probably and even if they hadn’t she could still try... Instead she lay and listened to the whirring of the ventilation system as she felt the soft mattress beneath her and noted the warm air at just the right temperature so she wasn’t uncomfortable.

Artemis re-entered the room. “So how was your first day?”

“Terrible.” said Daniella simply.

Artemis asked. “Did you meet Jake?”

“Yes, he slaughtered me.” said Daniella dryly.

“He does that.” said Artemis lightly. “Next time you see him, ask him to make it nice.”

Daniella snorted derisively. “Make it nice? What’s he gonna do? Put on some smooth jazz and whisper sweet nothings as he plucks out my eyes?”

Artemis chuckled then sat down on the bed beside Daniella and stroked her cheek. “No, silly... You’re a sylph. Do you know what that means?”

“That I’m a pet?” asked Daniella bitterly.

“That you’re perfect.” said Artemis sweetly.

Daniella almost choked from the laughter that burst forth from her.

“I’m serious...” said Artemis as her hand moved down Daniella’s chest.

“I get it, you like me. That doesn’t help.” said Daniella as she giggled.

Artemis laughed. “You think a lot of yourself don’t you?”

“You’re the one who called me perfect?” said Daniella pointedly before she broke out into laughter again.

Artemis withdrew her hand and leaned back against the headboard as she waited for Daniella to calm down. “I didn’t say you were perfect. I said that sylphs are perfect. There is a difference.”

“Well okay...” said Daniella curiously. “How are sylphs perfect and how does this help me?”

“There was a race of aliens-” began Artemis.

“Aliens?” interrupted Daniella. “Really?”

Artemis glared at her. “After all you’ve been through - A scientific theory so widely respected there’s actually a name for the unlikeliness of us having gone so long without having seen evidence of extraterrestrial life is what bothers you?”

Daniella sighed. “Fine. Aliens...”

Artemis patted Daniella on the head. “These aliens were a great and powerful civilisation. They had amazing bio and genetic engineering skills. They were brilliant, truly truly brilliant but they had a problem. A big problem.”

“What was it?” asked Daniella.

“Nobody really knows but it made them so afraid that they decided to run and hide.” said Artemis. “They could not fight this on their own so they created an artificial life form whose excretions could be combined to make a powerful substance capable of rewriting them at the most fundamental levels.”

“And that’s where sylphs came from?” clarified Daniella.

Artemis nodded. “They needed to be protected, to have people expend effort keeping them alive so they made themselves perfect. The perfect lovers, the perfect soldiers, the perfect slaves, the perfect pets and the perfect cattle.”

Artemis leaned over Daniella and stroked her cheek. “Sylphs are perfect and that’s what you are. Perfect. You are the animal capable of expressing clearly and efficiently a very genuine desire to be eaten alive.”

Daniella swallowed. “I’m really not.”

“Jake is very good at his job and he would have known it was your first time, that you would have been scared and out of your comfort zone so he gave you the best he could without giving you yet more to think about and worry about.” said Artemis.

“But it hurt.” said Daniella. “I didn’t want that.”

“And if it hadn’t hurt?” asked Artemis curiously. “If instead it had excited you and aroused you?”

Daniella went white at the thought. “That could happen?”

“Some women have been sent mad by it.” said Artemis. “I mean think about the first time you discovered masturbation? How much you wanted to spend every waking moment chasing that high?”

Daniella nodded slowly, her face a mixture of terror and disgust. “That would not be good.”

“So ask him to make it nice.” said Artemis.

Daniella shot Artemis a horrified look. “What?”

Artemis smiled sweetly. “It’s alright... I won’t let you get that way.”

“Are you sure?” asked Daniella. “Are you absolutely sure that if I begged and screamed for you to slice me up that you would deny me?”

Artemis nodded then she kissed Daniella on the forehead before she leaned back and said. “You are my pet. I will do what I can to protect you and care for you and if I have to I will be cruel to you for your greater good.”

Daniella reached out instinctively and hugged Artemis then she noticed something. “I’m healed.”

“Yes, you are...” said Artemis as she took Daniella’s hands in hers so she could kiss them. “Now do you want to go have a shower while I prepare dinner?”

Daniella grinned then she asked. “Could, I have some more clothes?”

Artemis sighed. “Do you really think that’s a good idea? I mean after everything that happened because of what I did let you have?”

Daniella groaned. “Fine. Well can you at least wash that bikini for me?”

“Of course.” said Artemis with a smile.

Daniella smiled then got off the bed as she headed in search of a shower. The duvet on the bed was noticeably slick with blood from where Daniella’s stumps had been.

*

August the 25th 2019 - Half an hour later.

Daniella stepped out of the shower, a towel wrapped around her chest.

Artemis approached with a bundle of stuff under her arm.

“Feel better?” asked Artemis.

“Much.” said Daniella. “Thank you.”

Artemis dropped the bundle on the floor then secured Daniella's collar about her neck.

Daniella grinned. "Kind of tickles when you do that."

Artemis placed her hands on Daniella's shoulders and whispered. "Do you trust me?"

"With my life." whispered Daniella nervously.

"Drop the towel." said Artemis.

The towel flumped to the floor.

Then Daniella felt the most amazing sensation run down her back. It was like every nerve in her back was screaming out with pleasure. She moaned excitedly. And then it was over.

Daniella panted. "What- What was that? What did you do?"

Artemis stepped out from behind Daniella. She held a large section of skin that she'd just sliced off Daniella's back. "Just testing an idea."

Artemis walked off.

Daniella stood and just panted for a moment. Then she looked at what Artemis had dropped beside her and grinned.

Daniella walked into the kitchen dressed in a gorgeous backless dress, pointed high heal shoes and a tiara.

Artemis was busy plating up food but as soon as she noticed she gasped. "You really are beautiful, aren't you?"

Daniella blushed.

Artemis whipped a phone out of her pocket and held it up at Daniella. "Now this I have to remember."

Daniella gave her a curious look. "You still have a smartphone?"

"Yes, I do." said Artemis, testily. "I know they aren't cool anymore but this was cheap and it comes with augmented reality and virtual reality."

Daniella snorted. "Well I prefer the apple watch myself, does all the same things but you don't have to worry about losing it."

Artemis glared at her and was about to respond negatively when she paused as she realized the greater significance of what Daniella had said.

Daniella frowned and found herself a chair, lost in thought. "I don't have an apple watch any more do I? I don't have anything..."

Artemis pulled up a chair opposite Daniella and took her hands in hers.

“That woman, the one who got angry at me having things, she called herself Queen of Valhalla. That’s where Vikings believed they would go when they died isn’t it?” said Daniella.

Artemis nodded. “They’d fight all day and drink all night. Forever.”

“That’s my life now, isn’t it?” asked Daniella. “I’m dead and this is the afterlife. I don’t even know if I can die now.”

Daniella screamed in frustration. “My life is so fucked!”

Artemis shook her head. “You matter...”

Daniella glared at Artemis. “I’m your pet...”

Artemis bit her lip and looked away.

“And now while my friends are off playing Fallout Altered Realities and enjoying all the new forms of art that are being created I am stuck in the afterlife being slaughtered every day.” said Daniella irritably.

Artemis looked back to Daniella, fire in her eyes now. “How old are you Daniella?”

“22.” said Daniella. “Why?”

“So you still live with your parents?” asked Artemis.

“Well I was doing a university course on The History Of Feminism And The Sociological Impact of New Media at Wolverhampton.” said Daniella, annoyed.

Artemis nodded she looked severely disappointed. “I am sure that was a very interesting course but since you understand the concept of privilege let me tell you that you are and were privileged. I’ve seen what it’s like in the big bad world so here’s what you missed when you were learning that characters in films are not realistic representations of how women actually are. The planet is fucked, the global economy is fucked, terrorism and ineffective wars to fight the terrorism keep killing the innocent and the current governments are a bunch of right wing idiots whose selfishness is so short sighted they can’t see how tanking the economy and starving the poor and middle class could backfire against them.”

Daniella stared at her. “I had nothing to do with any of that. Why are you shouting at me?”

“For the same reason feminists get mad at men who do nothing as others among them rape, abuse and murder women.” said Artemis icily. “You are so privileged you can’t even see the problems, let alone try to fix them.”

Daniella glared at Artemis. “You think I’m privileged? Seriously?”

Artemis nodded. “You are young and beautiful, you don’t have to worry about food or a job or how you’re going to pay the rent. Heck, you’re practically immortal. The world outside these walls is filled with the sick, the dying, the starving, the overworked and the underpaid. You’re in shit, I’m not denying that, but you are also incredibly fucking lucky.”

Daniella stared at Artemis for a long moment then sighed. “Look, I’m an idiot, I know that. I

wouldn’t be here if I wasn’t one. I just... I feel so crap.”

Artemis nodded. “That’s natural, but you are loved and you do have friends here. Tomorrow will be easier.”

“Will you come see me tomorrow?” asked Daniella.

“No, sorry.” said Artemis awkwardly. “I can’t have you everyday. You need to find a way to fit in with the other girls.”

“Don’t you mean the little lambs?” asked Daniella mockingly.

Artemis scowled, then she rose from her chair. “Speaking of lamb, we were going to eat weren’t we?”

Daniella grinned.

*

August the 26th 2019

Daniella woke up naked, save for her collar, at the foot of Artemis’s bed and went to clean her teeth and have a shower.

Artemis was waiting for Daniella when she exited the shower. Artemis was wearing her uniform and held a bundle of clothes under her arm. “Good morning, my little one, ready to start the day?”

Daniella smirked. “Oh I am positively champing at the bit.”

Artemis gently ran the nails of her left hand down Daniella’s back. “I wonder if I could ride you some day?”

Daniella moaned as she remembered how much much pleasure she’d felt when Artemis had sliced the skin off her back. “Sorry?”

Artemis chuckled. “It doesn’t matter. Lets get you dressed and fed.”

*

Chapter 8
Cut. This Time With Romance

August the 26th 2019 - An Hour Later

Artemis pat Daniella on the bum and watched her walk to the back of the queue.

Daniella strode over, dressed in the bikini, collar, backless dress, high heel shoes and tiara.

When she stepped through the black curtain she walked past the video before it could play and stood before Jake. “I’m the last.”

Jake laughed. He was a man that held a bloody knife, dressed in bloody clothes in a blood spattered room and a woman he was about to dismember had walked in like a glamour model.

Daniella twirled on the spot. “Do you like it?”

“I do hope this wasn’t for my benefit.” said Jake through the laughter.

“Well no...” said Daniella awkwardly. “But still, I respect your opinion.”

Jake nodded as he bit back the laughter. “In that case my professional opinion is that the dress is far too pretty to risk getting blood on. Take it off, I’ll see that it arrives safely at your final destination.”

Daniella chuckled and undressed. She placed the tiara, shoes, bikini, dress and collar in a cupboard. “By the way, Artemis let me know something about you...”

Jake shifted uncomfortably. “Oh yeah?”

“She said you can make me enjoy it.” said Daniella curiously. “That you could make me almost crave it?”

Jake snorted. “Well I’m not that good.”

Daniella turned back to him. Her clothes safely free from blood spatter. “Try me.”

“Are you serious?” asked Jake seriously. “Once I open your mind to that sensation it can’t be undone. Are you sure you wouldn’t be happier with quick and painless?”

Daniella shook her head. “I want this.” She approached him and rested her hands on his shoulders. “Make it feel good. Make me want it. Make me crave it. Make it so I long for your skilled blade entering my pert young flesh.”

Jake grimaced, his hands in the air, clearly uncomfortable. “I’ll do what I can but I make no promises.”

Daniella nodded. “That is all I ask.”

Jake asked. “Can you please remove your hands from about my shoulders?”

“Can you?” said Daniella with a wink.

Jake sighed and reached out with his blade.

Daniella gasped as pleasure overwhelmed her senses.

*

August the 26th 2019 - Sometime Later

Daniella woke up floating in the water.

Riksu was treading water beside her. “Hello again.”

Daniella switched from lying flat on the surface to treading water as well. “Hi. Where are the cages?”

Riksu shrugged. “The man from the video said the cages were just part of orientation but now we’re

supposed to drown ourselves so we can swim to the next part of the harvest?”

“Right...” said Daniella as she looked around at the empty pool. “So why is it just us?”

“You were taking a long time to wake up after healing.” said Riksu.

“Aww, and you wanted to wait for me?” asked Daniella.

Riksu frowned. “Actually I...” She paused and thought for a moment. “I have a fear of drowning. I wanted you to help me.”

“Help you to do what?” asked Daniella confused.

“Drown me.” said Riksu awkwardly. “So I can be harvested.”

Daniella stared at her, unsure what to say.

Riksu frowned then looked Daniella in the eyes. “I trust you. Please. I can’t do this by myself.”

Daniella nodded. “Okay but once I do this you need to let me ride your fin.”

Riksu smiled. “Deal.”

Daniella reached out for the back of Riksu’s head. “Ready?”

Riksu sighed. “Just do it.”

Daniella shrugged, forced Riksu’s head under the water and muttering to herself as she did so. “In the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost I annoint you now amid the waters of life as Hakarakin, Sharkborn.”

Riksu shuddered one last time as her lungs were filled completely with water and her body started to change.

Daniella swum away hurriedly.

When Riksu had finished transforming she smiled at Daniella and waved her fin at her.

Daniella grinned, swam forward then cried out. “Onwards, Riksu!”

Riksu dove beneath the surface with Daniella in tow.

They arrived at the next harvesting station and once again one man pulled Daniella away as the first two sliced up Riksu.

The man holding Daniella grumbled. “You again?”

“I’m Dany, pleased to meet you again.” said Daniella with a big toothy grin. “Who are you?”

“Tom.” said the man that restrained her. He seemed to eye her up then said. “Well I haven’t heard anything from the boss so I assume you don’t need anything kept safe this time?”

“No...” said Daniella casually. “I just need the hose. I couldn’t drown myself.”

“Fair enough.” He said as he fetched the hose.

Daniella watched what was left of Riksu trundle through by conveyor into the next room.

The two men paused and frowned.

Daniella waved. “I’m Dany and you are...?”

The first man groaned. “Fred, if you must know. Is this going to keep happening?”

The second man looked distinctly uncomfortable. “I’m a marine biologist. I don’t do people. Especially not naked beautiful people.”

Daniella frowned.

The first man added. “He’s George. Now if you don’t mind I’d like my tea, so can we hurry this up?”

Daniella shrugged.

“Open wide.” said the man with the hose.

Daniella tilted her head back and hung her lower jaw open as wide as it could go.

The hose was rammed down her throat then she started to drown. She was pulled to the floor, transformed and had her tail, fins and jaws removed before being carried into the next room by conveyor belt.

Daniella and Riksu lay together for a while, even after they’d transformed. They knew what came next so it was a welcome break.

Finally Riksu asked. “Did you baptise me?”

Daniella smirked. “I may have, Sharkborn.”

Riksu giggled. “I like that. Are you actually a priest?”

“Nah...” said Daniella as she sat up. “It just seemed appropriate.”

Riksu nodded as she sat up beside Daniella. “By the time I recovered last night they said you’d gone, been taken away by a woman, is that true?”

Daniella nodded. “I think I’m her pet... She’s nice.”

“I’d like to meet her some time.” said Riksu.

Daniella looked at her curiously.

Riksu returned the look.

Daniella asked “Could I just-”

“Yes.” said Riksu without hesitation.

“You don’t know what I want to ask you yet.” said Daniella with a chuckle.

“I don’t need to.” said Riksu. “I’ll tell you if I don’t like it.”

Daniella grinned then she reached over and kissed Riksu gently on the cheek. “Thank you for waiting for me, even if you had your own reasons.”

Riksu nodded then she got to her feet and waved her hand. “Valhalla awaits.”

Daniella rose to her feet and took Riksu’s hand. “Tonight we dine together.”

Riksu smiled.

They strode to the milking room together.

*

Chapter 9
The Undine Knights

August the 26th 2019 - 2 hours later.

Riksu and Daniella lay on a table as, on the side nearest Daniella, Lisa and Lucy sat giving her cake, mead and meat while a Chinese woman and a Japanese woman were similarly caring for Riksu.

The American woman from the night before stalked over with a box in her hands. “Where’s the traitor?”

Daniella waved her hand from the table. “Hi.”

Then she stared at her hand for a moment and flexed it while she watching it for a moment then she sat up. “My name is Dany. That’s Lisa and Lucy, you’ve met. This is Riksu and that’s Hai and Hotaru. Pleased to properly meet you. Sorry about yesterday.”

The American woman threw the box at Daniella. “This is for you, I’m told.”

Daniella reached inside the box. “Thanks. Who gave it to you?”

“The woman who stuck her fingers in my eyes yesterday, our so called Queen. Apparently she was given it by one of our guards.” said the American. “And I’m Kirsty, not that it matters. I mean you are a total dweeb.”

Lucy glared at the American. “Oi! She was being nice.”

“I got my eyes poked out yesterday because of her.” said the American, Kirsty.

Lucy rose from her bench to confront Kirsty. “Yeah, well you were trying to get her killed at the time.”

“I was trying to minimize the collateral damage actually.” said Kirsty.

The Chinese woman, Hai, said. “Sit down, both of you and have some mead. This is Valhalla, lets eat, drink and be merry.”

“How?” asked Kirsty. “I have no apple watch, I can’t check my social networks and I’m surrounded by naked people. My boyfriend put me in here and I have no idea if my family even knows I’m alive.”

Lucy frowned as she looked at Kirsty curiously.

Kirsty didn’t notice.

Hai said. “Take a seat. You are not alone. Even if you think you are.”

“Well okay...” said Kirsty irritably. “But if anyone starts flirting with me I’m gone. I like men. I don’t like being surrounded by tits.”

Lucy said. “Well in that case you’ll really like Hai, she doesn’t have any.”

Kirsty hissed. “You realise you just made me look at her tits, right?”

Lucy smirked and held out her hand. “Yeah, I’m kind of an arsehole at times, sorry about that. Truce?”

Kirsty sighed then shook her hand. “Fine.”

They sat down on the bench together.

“So what is it anyway?” asked Kirsty.

Daniella grinned and patted Riksu on the shoulder. “Can you help me with this?”

Riksu sat up, a smile on her face, then she secured the collar round Daniella’s neck before she helped tie Daniella into her bikini.

Daniella let Kirsty look in the box.

Kirsty stared at it then commanded. “Off the table, now.”

Lucy glared at Kirsty.

Kirsty showed her the dress and looked pointedly at her.

Lucy looked to Daniella and said. “Do as the girl says.”

Daniella smirked. “Yes, Mistress.” She slid off the table once Riksu had finished helping her with the bikini.

“You wish.” said Lucy with a grin.

“You have no idea.” said Daniella with a laugh. She slipped on the high heeled shoes then took to

her feet.

Kirsty rose with the dress and hung it over her with calm precision. Once she was sure the dress was on Daniella perfectly, she placed the tiara on Daniella's head.

"Oh yes..." said Kirsty at last.

Daniella grinned.

Lisa rose from the bench then dropped to bended knee before Daniella. "My Queen."

Lucy smirked.

Daniella stroked Lisa's head.

Lisa grinned.

Riksu rose from the table and said. "Like in those tales from the dark ages? King Arthur and the knights of the round table?"

Riksu dropped to the floor before Daniella, then knelt one of her knees. "I pledge my fealty to you, my Queen." Then she winked. "And my body, if you want it?"

Hai walked over the table to stand before Daniella. "You tried to lead us out of this place and twice you have helped my new friend in difficult times." She dropped to her knees. "I pledge my loyalty and aid to you, my Queen."

Lucy and Daniella shared a nervous look. This was not expected.

Hotaru drained her mead glass then strode over the table to stand before Daniella. "We're all lost souls here. None of us have a plan and few of us have hope. It is my honour to pledge myself to one who might offer it." She dropped to bended knee. "My Queen."

Daniella blushed.

Lucy sighed then dropped to bended knee. "I shall fight as you wish me, my Queen."

Daniella looked to Kirsty.

Kirsty burst out laughing. "Oh, honey, you're cute but I'm American. I believe in democracy and freedom and..." She frowned as dhe remembered who was president. "Oh, who am I kidding? Just get me some clothes." She dropped to one knee. "The one true Queen of Valhalla."

Daniella smiled as she struggled of what to say but then a flash of inspiration hit her. "Thank you, I shall try to prove that faith and loyalty well placed. I name you my Undine Knights and I swear to you that one day we shall all return home."

"Oh, really..." came a familiar booming voice.

The Undine Knights rose as one to defend their queen.

The Queen of Valhalla broke Daniella's legs with a couple of swift kicks then held her up by the

neck and snarled. “If you want my mercy you’ll not interfere.”

Kirsty cried. “Oh, fuck off!”

The Queen of Valhalla made as if to reach out.

Daniella cried “Stop!”

The noise alone caused the Queen of Valhalla to stop.

“Save your strength, I don’t want you hurt!” cried Daniella.

Hai and Hotaru nodded curtly.

Lisa and Riksu frowned but held back.

Lucy and Kirsty watched with fury in their faces. They were clearly only holding back for the moment.

The Queen of Valhalla hissed in Daniella’s ear. “I told you that I am Queen here, I told you that, I don’t like escape attempts. And you have even more belongings. I don’t like that.”

Daniella nodded. “And I can see that. I did not ask for this.”

“You did not deny it.” said the Queen of Valhalla.

“I can prove useful to you.” said Daniella.

The Queen of Valhalla chuckled darkly. “Well I suppose I could use a new punching bag.”

Daniella laughed as she glared at Lucy and Kirsty. “Very funny, your majesty, but as you’ve seen I have resources. I can get things. I could get things for you.”

The Queen of Valhalla chuckled. “True but couldn’t I just beat you until you got things for me anyway?”

Daniella looked at her friends, at these people who had pledged themselves to her. She looked to the Queen of Valhalla and smiled. “No.”

The Queen of Valhalla nodded then she reached out a hand for Kirsty’s neck. “And what if I hurt your friends?”

Kirsty stared at Daniella, terrified.

“No.” said Daniella quietly.

The Queen of Valhalla snapped Kirsty’s neck then let her body drop to the floor. “I am not bluffing.”

“Neither am I.” said Daniella quietly.

The Queen of Valhalla snapped Lucy’s neck.

Daniella said calmly. “The only time I can get things is when I am in a position where I am safe from you. When I am do you honestly think I will get anything for someone who will hurt me or my friends?”

The Queen of Valhalla sighed. “You make a good point.”

“Thank you.” said Daniella.

“But you are still traitorous scum.” said the Queen of Valhalla coldly as she snapped Daniella’s neck.

*

August the 26th 2019 - Sometime Later

Daniella woke up on large bare mattress in her bikini beside Lucy and Kirsty. In the distance Hai, Hotaru, Riksu and Lisa were sat in a circle as they talked.

Lucy pulled Daniella close and muttered. “Honey, don’t leave me...”

“What?” said Daniella, shocked.

Lucy woke up properly and almost leapt back in shock. “I am so sorry.”

Daniella got up and walked over to where the others were.

Lucy followed her.

“The Mistress and her loyal friend rise.” said Hotaru. “Please, sit...”

Daniella took a seat between Hotaru and Riksu.

Lucy sat on Hotaru’s other side, between her and Hai.

“So what happened?” asked Daniella.

“She stripped you of your crown, dress and shoes then left you in a heap.” said Hotaru. “We bought you back here, to our sleeping area, so you might recover.”

“This is it?” asked Daniella.

Hotaru nodded.

Riksu took Daniella’s hand in hers and squeezed it. “Your mistress has better accommodations I take it?”

Daniella nodded.

Hotaru looked at her questioningly for a moment then asked. “Who is this Mistress?”

“Artemis.” said Riksu with a shrug. “It’s on her collar. She is the property of Artemis and the great Geoff. That’s who gave her the things and who took her away yesterday.”

Lucy stared at Daniella. “Seriously? You belong to that woman?”

“Well I don’t know about legally but I am her pet.” said Daniella.

Lucy fell silent, unsure of what to say.

Hai patted Lucy’s back reassuringly.

“It’s because I’m a sylph.” said Daniella.

“What’s a sylph?” asked Lisa.

Hotaru held up a hand for silence then said. “I think you’d better start from the beginning. Clearly we have a lot to learn from our Queen.”

*

Chapter 10
Reap What You Sow

August the 27th 2019 - Morningish

Daniella pushed past the video screen as the remains of Jake’s last reap were sent on via conveyor belt. “We’re the last ones.”

Jake stared.

Daniella was not alone this time. There was an asian woman and a shorter blonde woman with her.

Jake glared at Daniella. “Dany, you’re a mate - Well a mate of a mate anyway. - but you need to explain yourself because this is a serious breach of protocol.”

Daniella nodded. “This is Riksu and Lisa. They’re friends of mine and they would like you to give them the pleasure experience.”

Jake grimaced as he sized up the women.

They both smiled at him and the blonde one waved.

He bit his lip and looked around nervously before he approached the new women in turn and squeezed their arms and legs to get a feel for bone diameter and muscle mass.

Finally he stood back and sighed. “Okay but in future you enter one at a time. If I know you’re fine with waiting I don’t mind taking my time with each of you but you need to stick to protocol. I can’t risk something going wrong with one of you and the others spooking.”

The girls nodded and Daniella saluted. “Yes, Sir.”

Jake looked to each of them in turn as he spoke next. “And if something does go wrong, as it can, you remain fucking calm. I don’t care if the girl I’m reaping is screaming in agony and you would die to help her - You bite your tongue and you stay still or I will paralyze you then reap you as quickly and efficiently as I can. Is that understood?”

The girls nodded once more.

Jake breathed a sigh of relief then he approached the blonde who had waved at him earlier. “Hi, I’m guessing you would be Lisa?”

Lisa nodded and stretched out her hand to shake. “When Dany told us about her experience with you yesterday, I simply had to try. I’m sorry if that’s a problem.”

Jake shook his head and grabbed the outstretched hand by the elbow as he reached for his knife. “Don’t be silly, it’s not a problem. Always a pleasure to have a satisfied customer.”

Jake’s knife bit into the skin around Lisa’s outstretched arm and she started groaning with pleasure until the knife sawed through the bone, then she let out an almighty shriek.

Jake tossed the arm onto one of the belts then asked. “Was that a good scream or a bad scream?”

Lisa blushed. “Good. Very very good.”

Jake nodded. “Open wide would you?”

Lisa dutifully opened her mouth as wide as it would go.

Jake grabbed the tip of her tongue with his left hand then pulled a smaller knife from a bench with his right, slid it inside her mouth, sliced the tongue off and pulled it out.

Lisa frowned.

Riksu looked to Daniella nervously.

Daniella asked. “What was that for?”

“Unlike you girls, I can’t heal.” said Jake. “If it’s a choice between my ear drums or your tongues, out come your tongues.”

Lisa sighed then tapped Jake with her remaining arm.

“Alright, I get the message, we’ll have you fully reaped in a jiffy.” said Jake as he picked up his usual knife to take off Lisa’s arm.

Once that arm was lying on the conveyor belt he started working on Lisa’s scalp and asked idly. “What happened to your clothes?”

Riksu asked. “How come you can talk now?”

“Because you were clearly annoyed about me removing your friends tongue but you didn’t interfere.” said Jake meaningfully then he shrugged.. “And besides I know Dany well enough that I can drop her in a second and your friend here is quite armless which just leaves you so unless you are a racial stereotype, I think I can take you.”

“Oh really?” asked Riksu with a smirk.

Daniella laid a hand on Riksu's shoulder. "Don't pick a fight with the man who's going to be dismembering you."

Riksu frowned.

"She's got a point you know." said Jake as he laid Lisa's scalp on the appropriate conveyor belt then went to pick up a smaller knife.

Daniella said. "To answer your question, since I'm actually staying in the Valhalla now I decided to just stash my clothes there."

Jake snorted as he removed Lisa's left eye and placed it on the appropriate conveyor belt.

"What was that about?" asked Riksu.

"Valhalla." said Jake, as he slid his knife under Lisa's right eyelid. "Funny name for the place you girls go to recover before the next day's slaughter."

Jake removed Lisa's right eye and placed it beside her left. He picked up a different knife and started slicing between Lisa's lower lip and her jawbone. "I would have thought hell was more appropriate. Like Prometheus condemned to have his liver eaten by eagles for all eternity."

"Well apparently that's what it's called." said Daniella dryly. "And there's a woman there who calls herself Queen. Have you heard of her?"

Jake had completely revealed Lisa's lower jawbone now and with a few extra cuts he pulled it free then placed it on the relevant conveyor belt.

He picked up a sharper more serrated knife and drove it up between Lisa's front teeth and upper lip before turning it 90 degrees and hammering the knife through the bone of her skull so he could separate the part of it which held her upper teeth from the rest of her skull. "Oh I've heard about her all right. Do you remember all those bad reapers I told you about? The ones who take pleasure in the suffering and destruction of women?"

"Yeah..." said Daniella uncertainly. "What about them?"

"From what I can figure this Queen of yours visits those that she finds out about and afterwards they tend to either resign immediately, commit suicide or in certain circumstances become much nicer towards the women they reap. To the point where some of the nicest reapers I know apparently got that way because the Queen paid them a visit." said Jake curiously.

Riksu was watching Jake drive the knife through the bone of Lisa's skull and asked. "Is that really needed? Surely if just the teeth are needed the whole skull would be accepted just as easily?"

Jake paused for a moment and smiled at her. "Nicely spotted. Well done. You're right. The bosses would accept what was left of the skull once everything else had been removed but if the girl wants pleasure that means letting her feel as much as possible of the process. At least as far as practically possible."

Riksu frowned for a moment then sighed. "Alright, just don't do that to me."

"Understood." said Jake and he went back to sawing through the bone of Lisa's skull.

“Have you ever met the Queen of Valhalla?” asked Daniella curiously.

Jake snorted. “Do I look like the sort to attract the Queen?”

Daniella and Riksu watch Jake as he was covered in blood and drove a knife through the skull of their friend. A friend they had just watched have her arms, eyes, tongue, scalp and lower jawbone removed.

Jake frowned. “Actually don’t answer that. Point is I’m not and I have never seen her. Why do you ask?”

“She stole her dress.” said Riksu bluntly.

Daniella slapped Riksu on the arm and glared at her.

“Well, it was a very pretty dress. “ said Jake idly as he removed Lisa’s upper jaw from her mouth and put it with her lower jaw. “Maybe she was jealous, like the Queen from Snow White?”

Jake turned Lisa round then found a chair so he could sit her on his lap and remove her legs.

Daniella grinned mischievously. “Are you saying you think I’m the fairest of them all?”

“I honestly wouldn’t know.” said Jake as he removed first one leg and then the other. “But if she’s calling herself Queen that suggests she’s got one hell of an ego and egos are famously sensitive to the slightest competition.”

Jake left Lisa on the chair as he placed her legs on the conveyor belts then he fetched his hammer and chisel to begin carving around the top of her skull. “I mean look at you. Most girls I see just want it swift and painless. No thought, no talk, just slash, slash, pluck, pluck, crack, pluck, slash, slash. It gets right boring. But you? You come in smiling and you talk to me like I’m a friend.”

“You are a friend.” said Daniella sweetly.

Jake smiled sadly as he looked at Daniella. “I’m your reaperman. It’s my job to harvest you for parts. We aren’t supposed to be friends. Yet here you are with two of your real friends inviting me to reap them as well. Now if you’ll excuse me, your friend here is just about done.”

Daniella nodded.

Jake removed the top of Lisa’s skull then he grabbed her by the shoulders and looked her in the eye sockets so she would hear him clearly. “Lisa, honey, we’ve just about done everything we can with you. The only thing left is removing your brain and obviously when that happens you’ll stop being able to hear what is happening so I’m gonna scoot you along to the next part of the process. I’ll continue talking to and reaping your friends so you may be alone for a bit but don’t worry they will be along shortly. Before I do finish you off I’d like you think carefully about how your experience was so that next time we can work on making your reaping even more enjoyable and if necessary see about solving any problem areas where things either weren’t as pleasurable or straight up hurt, okay?”

Lisa nodded.

“Good girl.” said Jake then he looked to Risku and Daniella. “You may want to look away now. This next bit isn’t pleasant. Even by these standards.”

Risku said. “Thank you.” Then turned her back.

Daniella still watched. “Proceed.”

Jake seemed surprised then nodded and fetched a different knife.

Daniella watched in silent fascination as Jake slid the knife between the brain and the skull. It occurred to her bizarrely that it was a similar process to removing a cake from the tin it was just baked in. Skim round the sides to cut off any bits that would cause it to stay in then gently jimmy the thing out. With the rather interesting twist that in this case the cake was alive and the removal of the cake from its tin would case it to no longer be alive. Though in this case the cake tin would continue to be alive, if unthinking until it baked a new cake for its tin.

“And there she goes...” said Jake as he pulled Lisa’s brain free. He noticed Daniella was staring at it, so he held it out to her. “You can hold it if you like.”

Riksu retched at the implications of what she could hear.

“Is it safe?” asked Daniella.

“Perfectly.” said Jake with a shrug.. “I mean for me, and every other mortal, this is us. This is where our consciousness resides. That’s actually why the bosses want them I think. This idea of brain uploading where you scan a brain in piece by piece so it can be simulated. Under those circumstances, if the technology worked, for a mortal like me, the brain would have to be handled with extreme care to avoid damage ruining the simulation. You and your friends however have the kind of weird biology that means Lisa is in fact safe and alive without her brain. This is just a dead muscle.”

Daniella took Lisa’s brain in her hands then grimaced immediately.

Jake nodded. “There is a reason I wear gloves.”

Daniella turned Lisa’s brain around in her hands, fascinated.

Jake carried what was left of Lisa to the relevant conveyor belt then started washing his blades in preparation for Riksu.

“So if this works does that mean there’ll be AI versions of us running in top secret research facilities?” asked Daniella.

“Maybe.” said Jake casually as he prepared his work area for the next reap. “I don’t really know. Not my job. If you want to keep looking at that thing could you get your own once Lisa has recovered? I mean if it’s just for curiosity you hardly need my skills do you? Heck I’m sure that Queen of yours would volunteer if you wanted someone to let you look at your brain.”

Daniella sighed and lowered Lisa’s brain down on its allotted conveyor belt then she reached for the button to send the conveyors moving and looked to Jake.

Jake nodded.

Daniella pushed the button and Lisa's various components were carried onwards to the next stage of the process.

"Is it over?" asked Riksu.

"Lisa has moved onto the next stage, yes." said Jake carefully.

Riksu turned around and let out a deep breath as she allowed herself to breath again.

"Now, whose next?" asked Jake.

Riksu looked to Daniella uncertainly.

"I'd like to continue talking for a bit, if that's okay?" asked Daniella.

Riksu grinned. She hugged Daniella then kissed her on the lips.

Daniella pulled her closer and started snogging her.

Riksu returned the favour and squeezing Daniella's bum before she broke it off.

Daniella and Riksu looked deep into each other's eyes for a moment. Each smiled with genuine love and relief.

"I'll wait for you." said Riksu then she turned to Jake and said. "I'm all yours."

Jake grinned. "No. You're hers."

Riksu blushed.

Daniella grinned. "As a matter of fact she and Lisa named me their Queen last night."

"Ah..." said Jake as he grabbed Riksu's left arm by the elbow and started carving through her skin. "That'll be why the Queen of Valhalla was pissed then."

"Might have been a factor." admitted Daniella with a smirk.

"Well I think she makes a better Queen." said Riksu.

"I'm sure you do." said Jake as he placed her left arm on its conveyor belt. "So how did you two meet?"

"She taught me how to swim when I turned into a shark." said Riksu.

"Tale as old as time." said Jake with a smirk.

"My mother always told me the people who are there for you through the hard times are the people to keep close and never lose." said Daniella with a smile. "Riksu was there for me when nobody else was."

Riksu looked to Daniella and smiled as Jake cut her right arm free and placed it on that conveyor

belt.

Jake grabbed a different knife then reached out for Riksu's face. "I'm going to need you to hold still okay. This next bit is difficult."

"Okay." said Riksu.

"You were saying earlier that I could remove Lisa's brain if I wanted to. Did you meant that?" asked Daniella.

"If she consented, yeah." said Jake as he removed Riksu's left eye and placed it on its conveyor belt. "You just need something sharp enough to carve through flesh and some way of delivering force. I mean there's kind of a knack to this job that you've just got to learn through experience but in time there's no reason you couldn't do it yourself."

"You could practise on me." said Riksu as Jake removed her right eyeball.

"Where would I get the tools though?" asked Daniella pointedly. "I mean there's mugs, mead, cake and meat. Somehow I doubt kitchen cutlery would suffice."

Jake paused midway through slicing off Riksu's scalp to laugh. "You would be right about that." He went back to work on Riksu's scalp and said. "You do have more resources than you realise though. I mean, you all have hair that can be turned into rope to bind things in a pinch and if you could extract one - say by slicing through the muscle and cartilage at the knee or elbow - then a bone can make a half decent hammer, club or shaft for an axe. Which means you just need something sharp and if you can turn into sharks that should not be hard to find."

Jake placed Riksu's scalp on the conveyor belt then found the chair from before and sat on it with Riksu on his lap so he could remove her legs.

"Are you seriously suggesting I harvest my friends for resources?" asked Daniella, aghast.

Jake looked up at Daniella in shock then said pointedly. "I am literally slaughtering your girlfriend as we speak."

Daniella frowned. "Yes, but this has to happen, so if it has to happen it makes sense that she gets seen to by the best. I can't just start pulling them apart for fun."

"Then don't." said Jake dismissively as he placed Riksu on the chair. Then he went to put her legs on the relevant conveyor belts. "I was just saying that you could if you wanted to."

Riksu added. "I did pledge my body to you if you wanted it."

Daniella's mouth dropped open in shock.

Jake looked pointedly at Daniella while pointing to the limbless, eyesless and scalped Riksu. "That make it easier for you? Enthusiastic consent from a woman who clearly knows what she is talking about because she is right in the middle of the act you want her to consent to."

"But it's wrong." said Daniella awkwardly.

Jake nodded. "You're right. You might get sent to hell if you performed the act, which would be

just so terrible because in hell you might get slaughtered every day of your existence."

He looked meaningfully at her for a long moment then he fetched his hammer and chisel so he could start removing the top of Riksu's skull.

Daniella was lost in thought.

Finally Jake removed the top of Riksu's skull so he put down his tools then placed his hands on her shoulders, looked her in the eye sockets and said. "Riksu, you said you didn't want me to remove your jaws if I didn't need to. Well in that case all that's left is removing the brain. So what do you want to do because I can remove your jaws if you want?"

Riksu thought for a moment then said "I think I'm ready to go, thanks."

"Okay then." said Jake gently. "Any last words?"

Riksu called out. "Dany, I'll wait for you! We can talk about what you want to do later but know that if you want anything from me you can have it!"

"Thank you." said Daniella sweetly. "I'll see you soon."

Riksu nodded then she said. "Make her happy, Jake."

"I'll do my best." said Jake as he fetched his tools.

Daniella crossed her arms and watched the whole thing.

Jake held Riksu's brain up to Daniella once it was out. "Want to hold it?"

Daniella shook her head.

"Fair enough." said Jake as he placed Riksu's brain on the appropriate conveyor belt.

Daniella started chewing her nails.

Jake placed what was left of Riksu on the appropriate conveyor belt then he sent the pieces of Riksu into the next stage of the process.

Daniella watched Jake nervously.

"Is there something wrong?" asked Jake, knowing what had to happen next.

Daniella nodded then forced herself to look Jake in the eyes. "If we hadn't met like this - if I hadn't fallen for the guy who put me in here and you had gotten a normal job but we'd still met - Do you think we would be friends, that we could be, or maybe, maybe, something more?"

Jake held her gaze and frowned. He sighed then looked away.

"Really? That bad, huh?" asked Daniella sadly.

Jake grimaced and forced himself to look at Daniella. "Dany, I'm an Essex wide boy. More than that though I am a centrist gay man from a conservative family. When I look at you I see exactly the

kind of girl my mum wanted me to marry. All you ever are - here or out there - is prime meat that people want to exploit and I hate those kinds of people so no. No, there is no way we could have met in a pub and been friends if this particular set of events had not happened."

Daniella swallowed then looked away. "Isn't this against protocol? Letting your cattle get stressed?"

Jake cracked his knuckles in frustration then said as calmly as he could. "You are not cattle."

Daniella looked him in the eye suddenly. "Well I can't be your friend can I? You just said as such?"

Jake groaned then he thought for a moment and said "Okay, clearly I have upset you and I apologise. I wish we could talk through this but I don't think there is any way a resolution ends with me reaping you and that unfortunately is what has to happen."

"I know..." said Daniella as she uncrossed her arms. "And this isn't your fault. I've just got a lot of stuff on my mind at the moment and I do actually want you to reap me for what it's worth."

"Well that's good because I'm going to." said Jake, relieved as he reaching for his favourite knife.

Daniella shook her head and glared at him. "I know but that isn't what I meant."

Jake paused, knife in hand. "Really? Then what did you mean?"

Daniella bit her lip then sighed. "I meant yesterday was nice. Really really nice. So nice that even if I could get out of here I'd still want you to do that to me."

Jake's mouth dropped in shock and he stared at her for a moment.

Daniella blushed and turned away. "I know, it's stupid. I'm just meat to you but I really really like you and I want you to like me."

"I do like you." said Jake quietly.

Daniella barked a short laugh. "You're gay. You can't even begin to see me in the way I see you. Just do it okay. I mean it is your job, penetrating women with your blade."

Jake groaned then he whispered. "If we are going to continue doing this then you need to apologise. Right now though you're right, I have a job to do, no matter how much I don't want to do it."

Daniella turned back to him. "I'm sorry."

Jake sighed, grabbed her left arm and started cutting through it.

*

August the 27th 2019 - Sometime Later

The shark swam into the underwater slaughter house while Daniella held its dorsal fin.

Tom pulled Daniella away as Fred and George went about slicing the shark up.

Tom asked. "Do you have a thing for me or something?"

Daniella shrugged. “Not particularly but if you know your way around a blade we might be able to talk.”

Tom chuckled and fetched the hose.

As the remains of the shark were sent into the next room, Daniella waved at Fred and George. “Hello again, sorry for the bother.”

“It’s fine.” said Fred.

“Could you at least put some clothes on if you’re going to keep coming here?” asked George.

Fred glared at George. “That wouldn’t work because she has to turn into a shark so we can do our jobs and any clothes would burst in the process.”

Tom turned the hose on and Daniella started drowning.

*

August the 27th 2019 - A Few Hours Later

Daniella lay face down on the table in the mead hall as Kirsty forced her head inside a bowl full of mead.

Hai and Hotaru sat on the benches on one side of Daniella as Riksu and Lisa sat on the other. Lucy stood on the table with mugs on her feet.

Daniella transformed into a shark.

Kirsty fell back.

Lucy started kicking away at Daniella’s shark teeth.

Kirsty crawled forward and reached her hand into Daniella’s mouth to start retrieving teeth that were knocked free.

Daniella tried to keep her mouth open and will herself to remain a shark for as long as possible but it wasn’t long before she transformed back.

“Did we get enough?” asked Lucy.

Kirsty shrugged, she’d collected the teeth in the mead bowl. “About five, maybe seven you include the more broken ones?”

Daniella nodded. “Enough.”

Riksu rose from her seat as Daniella climbed off the table. They embraced for a moment then Daniella turned round as Riksu helped secure her collar round her neck and her bikini about her body. “You know you could practice on me if you wanted to.”

“No.” said Daniella firmly. “Lisa, if you would?”

Lisa climbed onto the table then rolled onto her back. “My body is ready, Queen.”

“Before I do this I don’t suppose anybody here is a surgeon or a vet or something?” asked Daniella.

“Well I worked at McDonalds once but I never had to prepare the meat.” said Kirsty.

Hotaru raised her hand. “My dad was a fisherman so I can help you gut her but not much else.”

Hai gulped down some mead then belched. “My dad wanted a boy.”

She noticed people were looking at her as if she had said something strange. “Carry on. Cut the girl, already.”

“Right...” said Daniella, once the bikini was properly secured. “Lucy, ever snapped a neck before?”

“No...” said Lucy as she glared at Daniella.

“First time for everything.” said Daniella. “Me and Riksu heard her scream when Jake was reaping her this morning and he’s a professional with a good blade. I’m an idiot with a tooth. I need you to snap her neck if the screaming gets too much. Practise on Kirsty if you have to.”

“Hey!” said Kirsty.

“You heard the Queen.” said Lucy with a smirk as she sat down on the table beside Kirsty and placed her hands round her neck.

Kirsty groaned. “Fine but I forbid you harvesting me for parts.”

Daniella picked up one of the mead mugs that Lucy had worn on her feet and handed it to Lisa. “Bite down on this when it hurts.”

Lisa nodded. “As you wish, my Queen.” She held the mug in her mouth with her right hand.

Daniella said “Riksu, hold her down.”

Riksu nodded and got in position.

Daniella pressed down on Lisa’s upper arm as she started slicing away at the inside of her elbow with the tooth.

“Ow!” exclaimed Kirsty as Lucy pulled at her head. “Ow! Ow! What are you even -”

Lucy muttered. “You know what I’m doing.”

Blood spurted from Lisa’s arm and she suppressed a moan by biting down on the mead mug handle.

Daniella wiped the blood away from her face and said. “I think we are getting somewhere I just need to try something else. Lucy, how are you doing with Kirsty?”

“Is this really necessary?” asked Kirsty.

“Well we could always practise on you I suppose?” asked Daniella pointedly

Kirsty grimaced. “Fine.”

Lucy groaned. “Would you please hold still?”

“You keep trying to pull my head off!” cried Kirsty angrily.

“Yes...” hissed Lucy. “And if you actually held still I might be able to succeed and you would wake up tomorrow morning right as rain.”

Kirsty groaned and held up her hands. “Fine. Give me a moment.”

Lucy raised her arms in the air. “Okay...”

Kirsty recomposed herself and stared far off to the left while sitting straight up. “Now try.”

Crack!

“And down she goes...” said Lucy as she laid Kirsty’s lifeless body down on the table.

“Excellent.” said Daniella as she backing off from the table. Riksu followed suit. “If you would?”

Lucy shuffled over to behind Lisa and muttered. “Tomorrow I getting you the biggest flagon of mead I can find, okay?”

Lisa giggled then whispered in her ear. “If you insist.”

Crack!

Lucy laid Lisa’s head gently down on the table then rose from it and shot Daniella a death glare.

It did not go unnoticed by Daniella but she wasted no time thinking about what it meant now. Instead she pulled Lisa’s left arm back on itself, sliced through what tendons were exposed by the process until her lower arm was pulled and cut free.

Daniella vaulted the table with Lisa’s disconnected lower left arm then gave it and the tooth to Hotaru. “You said you knew how to gut fish, see what you can do about exposing the bone.”

Hotaru nodded as she accepted the arm. “On my honour, Queen.”

Now she knew what she was doing and wasn’t worried about causing her friend pain Daniella worked through Lisa’s right arm in half the time.

Hai reached out for it and grabbed a spare shark tooth, with a nod to Daniella.

Daniella rolled Lisa over and started working on the underside of her left knee.

Riksu coordinated with her as she held Lisa’s body down so Daniella could focus on severing the muscle at the joints.

Lucy just stood and stared, as Riksu, Daniella, Hai and Hotaru butchered Lisa.

Daniella pulled Lisa’s left leg back on itself and cut it free.

Hai reached out for the leg with a nod.

Daniella vaulted the table once more to work on Lisa’s remaining leg.

Lucy stared at her, then at Lisa’s sweet innocent face and Kirsty, her new friend, lying unconscious on the table. Lucy looked down at her own hands and backed away before finally she turned around and walked.

Daniella bent Lisa’s right leg back on itself and cut it free.

Hai reached out for the leg with a nod.

Daniella pressed the tooth into Riksu’s hand with a meaningful look then started to walk after Lucy.

They walked past row upon row of merry drinkers and the vast kitchens that fed them. Great barrels of mead and at least a hundred cows and pigs rotating on spits.

They walked past women dancing drunkenly to music that could only be heard under the strobe lights of the dance floor, a basketball court and a football pitch attended by teams wearing different colour sports bras.

If you looked up you could see masked guards with big guns patrolling from high up walkways and security cameras.

Finally they came to where the Queen of Valhalla sat on a throne of women overlooking a fighting arena, seemingly demarcated only by the watching crowds.

Daniella swore and paused before she turned around to walk back.

Lucy froze and turned. She saw Daniella walk away. She ran after her easily and asked. “You came after me?”

“Of course.” said Daniella, surprised it was ever in doubt.

“But why?” asked Lucy.

“I’m not blind.” said Daniella seriously. “I saw the way you looked at me after you snapped Lisa’s neck, how your whole posture changed. What’s happened? You knew the plan, why didn’t you speak up if you had a problem with it?”

“Because you’re my Queen.” said Lucy sadly. “I would die for you, you know that.”

“Then what changed?” asked Daniella.

Lucy stared at her.

Daniella grimaced. “Lucy, I can’t fix the problem if you don’t tell me what it is.”

Lucy stared at Daniella for a long moment before she nodded and let out a long sigh. “You were supposed to be different to that thing up there. You were supposed to lead us out of this hell hole

and end the slaughter. Yet now you're butchering your friends and you've got my hands bloody as well? What the fuck happened, Daniella? What the fuck happened to you?"

Daniella nodded. "I deserved that. Lets get some mead and I'll try to explain."

Lucy sighed then nodded and they approached the nearest bar.

Daniella leaned on the bar and tried to catch the eye of one of the tenders.

A short brunette approached her with a smile, "Well, well, well, if it isn't the great Dany? The Queen In Waiting?"

Daniella stared. "You've heard of me?"

Lucy raked her face as she groaned.

The bar tender smirked at Lucy's reaction and nodded at Daniella. "Not many girls in here wearing bikinis and collars giving their name as Dany."

Daniella shut her eyes as she blushed and tried to bury her head into the wood on the bar.

The bar tender chuckled. "Clearly the Queen In Waiting still has some things to learn. Anyway I'm Catherine. How may I help you?"

"Two large flagons of mead." said Lucy.

Daniella said "Actually I'm happy with a small."

"And a small flagon of mead for the Queen here." said Lucy with a smirk.

"Excellent..." said the bar tender as she fetched the drinks and placed them on the counter. "Now how will you be paying?"

Daniella and Lucy froze.

Lucy asked. "I don't suppose you'd accept my friend's left arm as payment?"

Daniella glared at Lucy.

The bar tender reached for a knife with one hand then beckoned to Daniella with the other.

Daniella looked furious but reached her left arm over the bar anyway.

The bar tender placed the blade of the knife against Daniella's skin before she burst out laughing and tossed the knife aside. "Of course you don't have to pay you daft bints. You're the produce. Now take your mead and go before I think of a way to take advantage of your gullibility."

Daniella frowned and accepted her small mead.

Lucy smirked, accepted her mead flagons and mouthed silently "I like you" to the bar tender once Daniella had turned away.

They walked about fifty meters away as they sipped their drinks before Daniella asked. “Did you know she was having us on?”

“Of course.” said Lucy dryly.

“Then why didn’t you say something?” asked Daniella irritably.

“I wanted to see if you’d follow through on it.” said Lucy casually.

“And?” asked Daniella.

“And you did.” said Lucy with a smirk. “I was going to ask if she’d accept an arm and a leg but I thought that might be too obvious. Now I’m wishing I’d tried it.”

“Why?” asked Daniella incredulously

“Because it’s funny.” said Lucy cheerfully. “The Great Queen Dany paying for a few flagons with blood.”

“Except it’s not funny to me because that’s what I’m going to have to do.” said Daniella seriously.

Lucy was laughing. “What? Pay for mead with an arm and a leg?”

“Pay for our freedom with bloodshed.” said Daniella quietly.

Lucy froze then stared at Daniella. “What?”

Daniella sipped her mead then swept her free hand in front of her. “Look at all these people, Lucy. All these women: Laughing, telling jokes, dancing, flirting, fighting and playing games. Every one of them suffers in this place and the truth is that this mead is paid for with bloodshed. It is provided as a calculated expense to see that they all go willingly to the slaughter each day and we each pay for more than an arm and a leg for our mead. This place is hell.”

“Then why are you slaughtering, Lisa?” asked Lucy, her voice calm but her expression a mixture of disgust and contempt.

“Because we aren’t just here as consenting individuals.” said Daniella seriously. “Even if we convinced every one of these women to fight, they would be slaughtered.”

Daniella looked Lucy in the eyes then pointed at the guards patrolling above. “Those bastards have spent every day since this hell began preparing for the day we decide we won’t go willingly to the slaughter. Those guns aren’t just for show. I know because they have been used against me. If we want to get out of here we need to accept that our hands will get very bloody. Think about all the great revolutions. The storming of the Bastille in France. The execution of King Charles the first in England, the Tea Party in America, the anti-slavery insurrection of Saint Domingue. Not one was bloodless.”

Lucy nodded then said bitterly. “But none of that means we have to turn against our own. What the hell did Lisa do to deserve that.”

“She volunteered.” said Daniella fiercely.

Lucy stared at her. “And that excuses it does it? She loves you, she would do anything for you. That’s why she volunteered and you’re just going to take advantage of her? Seriously?”

Daniella nodded. “We need armour, we need weapons, we need food and we need tools with which to get all of this. What we have are girls who can heal. So yes if one volunteers herself I am going to make full use of her.”

Lucy stared at Daniella for a long moment then downed a flagon. “So suppose I see your point? Suppose I think you’re right but that doesn’t stop me feeling shit? Suppose I can know you’re right and still feel in my gut that you’re wrong? What then? What do I do if all I want to do is run?”

“Join the fucking club.” said Daniella dryly.

And that’s when Lucy saw it, the fear in Daniella’s eyes, the look of a scared little girl who was way out of her depth. “Oh...”

Daniella nodded, a smile fixed on her face despite how shit she felt. “I was a literary feminist attending lectures on trigger warnings and having discussions about safe spaces online. I felt righteous anger if a guy assumed I wasn’t into violent video games even though they made my stomach churn. I never wanted to lead an army, to lead a revolution. I wanted to debate whether characters in video games were dressed that way because the characters chose to or because the author was a misogynistic prick. That’s me. A precious intersectional feminist giving speeches about how women shouldn’t have to conform to outdated stereotypes designed to please men, before I then spent hours looking in the mirror so I could go a loud room and have men buy me drinks as I decided which one I would let fuck me.”

Daniella sighed and shook her head in frustration. “Am I making any fucking sense?”

Lucy gave a kind of half smile. “I just sort of played sports and tried to actually see guys as people but I think I see what you’re saying. This isn’t the life you wanted.”

Daniella nodded. “Too fucking right.” She bit her lip and looked at Lucy for a moment before she added. “There is this phrase, it’s a kind of a statement of wisdom some dead guy came up with. If you look into the abyss, the abyss looks into you and if you’re going to fight monsters you should be careful you don’t become one yourself.”

“Right...” said Lucy thoughtfully. “I always lived by a simple maxim myself. Don’t be a cunt.”

Daniella stared at Lucy.

“Sorry, you were saying?” asked Lucy.

“The first day I arrived here I turned into something, something big.” said Daniella in a dread whisper. “I saw what it looked like from my reflection in the water and I was scared. I think that’s why they’ve got the guns. They aren’t scared of us as girls, they’re scared of what we could become if we learned how and so am I but I think - I think it might be our only hope.”

“So... what?” asked Lucy curiously. “You’re worried you might become a monster?”

“I’m worried I might have to become one, yeah.” said Daniella as she studied Lucy. “So I want you to hold onto that doubt, to use it and to plan how to bring me down because I may need you to one day.”

Lucy stared at Daniella. “You want me stop you?”

“Not yet.” said Daniella with a smile. “Not until I’ve got us out but then I might.”

“Okay...” said Lucy uncertainly. “So is that why you came after me? Is that why you’re not angry that I doubt you? Because you doubt yourself?”

Daniella nodded.

Lucy downed her second flagon. “Then lets go slaughter that pretty girlfriend of yours.”

Daniella swallowed nervously as she stared at Lucy.

Lucy ran her fingers through Daniella’s hair then kissed her on the forehead before she slid her hand down Daniella’s back and took her hand.

Daniella smiled and nodded. They walked back together.

*

Lisa’s upper arms and upper legs had been removed by the time Lucy and Daniella returned.

Riksu was just removing Lisa’s scalp as they arrived.

Lucy nodded respectfully. “You’ve made good progress.”

“Thank you.” said Riksu as she worked. “Lisa has such slim arms and legs it was easy. That Bitch Queen would be much more difficult.”

Daniella embraced Riksu from behind and kissed her on the neck.

“My Queen, I do hope you don’t think I was referring to you?” asked Riksu with a smile.

“Of course not.” said Daniella with a chuckle. “Do you still want to volunteer, yourself?”

Riksu stopped her work, dropped the tooth, and turned to face Daniella. Riksu placed her hands either side of Daniella’s head and stroked her cheeks. “Of course, Dany, my body is yours.”

Daniella grinned as she pulled Riksu into a snog.

Lucy looked sadly at Lisa then saw Hai reaching out for her and nodded. She passing her friend over to Hai so Hai might finish removing Lisa’s scalp.

Riksu pulled back, a smile on her face, then she started sliding her hands underneath Daniella’s bikini.

Daniella grinned then said. “Get on the table.”

Riksu chuckled and backed onto the table.

Daniella crawled onto the table and placed her mouth between Riksu’s legs.

Riksu grinned.

Lucy grimaced as she saw Kirsty's lifeless body on the table. She looked to Hai and Hotaru then indicated Kirsty with her fingers as she mouthed. "I might just..."

Hai and Hotaru nodded as they continued working with Lisa's body.

Lucy scooped Kirsty's body up in her arms then walked away from the table.

By the time Lucy returned, without Kirsty's body, Riksu was screaming excitedly as Daniella's face was buried between her legs.

Hai caught Lucy's look then pointed down at Lisa's now scalp less body and gave a thumbs up.

Lucy returned the thumbs up then quietly reached over for Lisa's body before she walked away once again.

When Lucy returned Riksu was panting quietly as Daniella continued to have her face buried between her legs.

Hai gave a double thumbs up to Lucy

Lucy looked at Hai like she was mad and mouthed silently. "What?"

Hai pointed to Riksu and Daniella with one hand while counting down with her other: Five, Four, Three, Two, One. Double thumbs up.

Lucy looked to Riksu and Daniella again.

"Enough..." moaned Riksu. "Thank you."

Daniella lifted her head up from between Riksu's legs a huge stupid grin on her face. "Pleasure."

Riksu lay back and took deep breaths.

Daniella sat back and drained a flagon of mead before she looking meaningfully at Lucy.

Lucy mouthed. "Now?"

Daniella nodded.

Lucy shrugged and climbed onto the table. She shimmied behind Riksu and whispered "Sweet dreams."

Riksu giggled. "Lucy, my pretty friend. I want this. Make sure she knows that."

Lucy frowned. "I will..." Then she looked to Daniella.

Daniella nodded vigorously.

Lucy sighed.

Riksu looked Daniella in the eyes and said “I love -”

Crack!

Lucy slid off the table then indicated Riksu’s lifeless body.

Daniella sighed. “Thank you.” Then she picked up a clean shark tooth climbed off the table and set to work dismembering Riksu.

Lucy stood back as she watched Daniella carve into Riksu with quiet terrified fascination. A flagon was placed in her hand and she took a drink without thinking.

Catherine, the bar tender, stood beside her as she watching the Queen In Waiting work. “That’s your friend, the Queen In Waiting?”

“Yup.” said Lucy before she took a gulp of mead.

“And that girl on the table that she’s dismembering, that’s her girlfriend?” asked Catherine.

“Yup.” said Lucy as she took another gulp.

“You’re going to snap her neck once she’s done aren’t you?” asked Catherine.

Lucy nodded and a long glug of mead.

“Do you want me to help you cut her up?” asked Catherine.

“That would be nice.” said Lucy.

“Okay.” said Catherine cheerily. “We can slaughter her together.”

“Cheers.” said Lucy as she raised her flagon.

“To new friends.” said Catherine as she raised hers.

“To new friends.” said Lucy as she downed the rest of her drink.

“She is very pretty.” said Catherine. “We could fuck her?”

“She is...” said Lucy as she noted how shapely Daniella’s bum looked as she bent over the table to slice through Riksu’s elbow tendons. “But perhaps not today.”

“Okay then.” said Catherine with a nod.

They stood in silence for a moment as they watched Daniella carve up Riksu.

Catherine asked suddenly. “Of course, we could have a fuck if you liked?”

“Alright.” said Lucy as she turned to Catherine with a smile.

Catherine grinned and took Lucy by the hand then led her away.

Daniella hopped over the table, passing Riksu's severed lower left arm to Hai before she set about Riksu's right arm.

Daniella worked quickly and calmly, without emotion, carving through Riksu's flesh. In a moment she had Riksu's lower right arm free and passed it to Hai wordlessly. Daniella flipped Riksu over and started carving away at the flesh behind her left knee. Another moment later and Hai was grabbed the separated lower leg as Daniella vaulted the table to work on her other leg.

Daniella paused when she'd removed Riksu's lower right leg. The next part she hadn't done before. She had to lift Riksu's upper arms up to display the muscle then them twist in place to reveal what tendons to cut. Hai received the upper arms wordlessly.

Daniella looked down at Riksu for a moment once her arms were removed. Riksu had finished Lisa off for her, she knew what to do.

Daniella smiled wistfully at Riksu's brilliance then grabbed her chin so she could look at that beautiful face, so peaceful now. Daniella grinned then bit her lip trying to think of what to do next. She tasted cum and chuckled, remembering what she'd done for Riksu before Riksu had given herself to Daniella for parts.

An idea occurred to Daniella then. She spread Riksu's legs and started slicing.

Finally Daniella stood back admiring her work as Riksu lay entirely armless and legless on the table.

Lucy arrived behind Daniella and patted her on the back. "You're finished, well done."

Daniella nodded. "I just need to figure out how to remove her scalp now."

"Don't be silly, Hai can do that." said Lucy softly.

"Well, yes, I know but I've got nothing else to do and she is my girlfriend." said Daniella absently.

Lucy nodded and placed her arm around Daniella's neck. "I know but why don't you just have a little rest while I finish things up."

Daniella chuckled. "Well I'm not tired." Then she saw who was with Lucy. "Is that the woman from the bar?"

"Her name's Catherine." said Lucy.

Catherine waved.

Hai surreptitiously slid Riksu's body away from the main work area and over to where she and Hotaru were working.

"Is she your...? Are you and she...?" asked Daniella curiously

"It's early days." said Lucy then she rubbed Daniella's back gently. "Are you sure you don't want a little rest?"

Daniella was about to respond when Lucy continued. “I mean we could use the bones and you do have very long hair...”

Daniella looked at Lucy curiously.

Lucy nodded.

Daniella looked to Charlotte curiously.

Charlotte nodded, a big grin on her face, then gave two thumbs up.

Daniella remembered the joke at the bar and her apparent blindness to how anyone could recognize her, that both Lucy and Charlotte had seen through. Indeed as she looked to the table now she saw that Hai was quietly removing Riksu’s scalp so the work area was clear. “Oh...”

Lucy patted her back. “So what do you reckon? Do you feel sleepy?”

“Yeah...” said Daniella as she understood. “Yeah, you know what? I think I do feel tired after all.”

Daniella shot Lucy a smile.

“Good...” said Lucy with a grin.

“I think I might just lie down here.” said Daniella as she backed onto the table.

“I’ll make sure you get home, alright.” said Lucy as she took to the table herself.

“Good luck.” said Daniella meaningfully.

“Sweet dreams.” said Lucy sweetly.

Crack!

*

Chapter 11
Like A Thief In The Night

August the 27th 2019 - Maybe

There was a hand over Daniella’s mouth and something sharp biting into her neck as a voice hissed “Scream and I’ll cut you.”

Daniella was deftly silent and raised her hands up in the sign of surrender. She could just make out Riksu and Lisa still asleep peacefully either side of her.

“Good girl.” said the voice as she lowered the hand about Daniella’s mouth and lessened the pressure of the knife against her neck. “Walk with me.”

“Okay.” said Daniella, as quietly as she could.

Suddenly there was a tall figure in front of her who offered her a hand up. Daniella took it and got to her feet.

Daniella walked with the shadow through the dark for a time until they came to what seemed to be a solid impassable wall. The figure placed something against the wall and a doorway appeared. They walked through and it closed behind them. They walked for maybe a mile or more before they came to a door which led outside.

The stars lit up the night sky and as her eyes adjusted to the gloom Daniella saw that she was standing with one of the masked guards.

“As beautiful as ever.” said the guard.

“I’m sorry, have we met?” asked Daniella.

“Oh, of course.” said the guard as she pulling off her mask to reveal the woman who had freed Daniella on the plane to this mad house.

“Magpie?” said Daniella as a rush of emotions washed over her. “You’re alive?”

Magpie nodded. “I thought there was a chance we might be on a plane or a boat or something. That’s why I gave you the advice to play dumb if you couldn’t find a way off but I hoped I could slip away, find some civilisation.”

“And did you?” asked Daniella.

Magpie shook her head. “We’re on an island. The whole thing has got a great intranet across it with severe restrictions for data going in and out but I managed to get hold of an old ipad and set up a VPN through some of them. From what I can find this island isn’t on the charts. It doesn’t officially exist.”

“Shit.” said Daniella.

Magpie nodded. “I think I might be able to steal a boat to get a signal out to the wider internet. There’s enough refugee crises going on at the moment that I should be able to get picked up easily enough if I can send a signal out with my GPS coordinates.”

“Right...” said Daniella, as she processed what Magpie what she was saying. “And what about me? What about us? I mean do you know what’s going on? How do we get out?”

Magpie held Daniella’s gaze for a long moment before she said. “I’ve just realized I don’t even know your name.”

“Daniella Hopkins, but you can call me Dany.” said Daniella. “What do we do? They’re slaughtering us. Every single day.”

Magpie frowned and looked away, out to sea. “When I was looking for a way off this island. I saw things. I saw body parts being packaged up for shipping abroad. Heads without brains and eyes having their teeth carved out of them one by one. The fins, tails and teeth of sharks being sent off.”

Daniella nodded. “That’s us.”

“When I was poking around the intranet, trying to find a way past it, I found these videos...” said Magpie nervously.

Daniella said. “Those will be the ones where that bloke guides people through the daily slaughter.”

Magpie nodded. “I saw those too but I also saw the videos that guy made for investors. Where he explains about these things called Sylphs and Weresharks and a man called the Farsh-nuke.”

Daniella nodded. “So have you figured it out then? What happened when you freed me?”

Magpie sighed and ran a gloved hand through Daniella’s hair.

Daniella moaned with pleasure then looked meaningfully at Magpie.

“I could take you with me.” said Magpie quietly as she studied Daniella.

Daniella frowned and closed her eyes. She forced herself to think of Artemis, Lisa, Lucy and Riksu. Dear dear sweet Riksu. “No.”

Magpie nodded. “When I freed you, Dany, it was so you could help the other’s escape. It wasn’t for you and it wasn’t for me. It was for everyone who was captured. You have a chance to help them. To tip the balance.”

“I know...” said Daniella quietly as she looked to her feet. “I did things today - Things I would never have thought myself capable of. - All so I could build an army to lead them to freedom but when I do, what happens then?”

Magpie shrugged. “Well if I succeed in getting to safety I’ll spread the word so an army might come to liberate you or at the least the world will be prepared for your liberation and in that case maybe we could find each other...”

“And if you don’t succeed in getting to safety?” asked Daniella as she looked nervously at Magpie.

Magpie hardened at the question. “Then you can fight, takeover this island, turn into sharks and swim to safety. Maybe bring people along with smart phones so when you get to the internet you can broadcast your situation and GPS coordinates?”

“That’s not going to be easy.” sad Daniella.

“No, it really, really isn’t.” said Magpie sadly. “That’s why I want you to come with me. We can get the army in and they can liberate you.”

Daniella snorted. “Yes, because the authorities are really going to believe that a company is kidnapping women and taking them to an island that doesn’t exist so they can turn them into immortal shape changers which will willingly be slaughtered? Heck, they might applaud the ingenuity and think nothing is wrong.”

Magpie looked at her imploringly. “Please, let me take you away from all this.”

“Hold on...” said Daniella as she realized something. “How are you going to eat? How are you going to find clean drinking water?”

Magpie froze. She looked like she’d been caught in the middle of a crime.

Daniella stared at Magpie. “That’s why you want me along isn’t it? So you can drink my milk, eat my flesh and if you can’t find a boat, ride me to freedom?”

Magpie frowned and looked away. “I’m sorry, but it’s a chance...”

“A chance to get lost in the middle of the Atlantic ocean or wherever we are and possibly end up caught in an endless cycle of death and regeneration.” said Daniella coldly. “It’s okay for you. You can only die if your escape attempt fails. Here I have food, drink, friends and a real shot at freedom, if I take my time. If I go with you I have no hope.”

“But you’re being slaughtered every single day.” said Magpie incredulously.

“And I like it.” said Daniella bluntly.

Magpie stared at her.

“I know, it was a surprise to me as well, but my reaper’s a nice guy and I love it when he butchers me.” said Daniella seriously. “You couldn’t slaughter me like he could. You wouldn’t have the tools or the space and I am damn certain you don’t have the experience.”

“I could get all those things.” said Magpie uncertainly.

Daniella shook her head. “You’re free to take what you wish of me now but I am not joining you. Find one of the girls yet to be orientated, imprint on them and show them the videos then explain your plan. They might go along with it and I hope for your sake that they do. It would be nice to think that my Mistress was alive somewhere trying to help me.”

Magpie looked at Daniella for a long moment then sighed. “Okay, I’ll do that but what about you?”

Daniella shrugged. “I’ve got a girlfriend, Riksu, and there’s this woman... Artemis.”

Magpie nodded. “She gave you the collar?”

Daniella nodded. “And a few other things besides. She likes me, as a person, and as a pet. I’ll be alright.”

Magpie smiled. “Well that’s good.”

“And I think one of my best friends in this place slaughtered me today.” added Daniella with a grin. “It’s weird but this place is starting to feel like home.”

Magpie snorted then she hugged Daniella and kissed her on the forehead. She pulled back and ran a gloved hand through Daniella’s hair. “I’ll be back for you, I promise.”

Daniella grinned. “I know. I’ll be waiting.”

Magpie nodded then she put her mask back on. “Lets get you home then.”

Daniella took Magpie’s hand in hers and said. “Thank you for showing me the stars.”

Magpie paused then she pointed at constellation of stars. “Do you see that collection of stars there? Like a v connecting two points?”

Daniella nodded. “Yeah, I see them.”

“That’s the constellation of Pisces.” said Magpie.

Daniella pulled a face. “Isn’t that a star sign?”

Magpie nodded. “Two lovers who fell into the sea and became fish, binding themselves with rope so they wouldn’t get lost. The rope is actually the majority of the constellation and do you know what the Babylonians called that rope?”

“No...” said Daniella.

“Riksu.” said Magpie.

Daniella stared at the constellation in wonder. “Riksu...”

Then Magpie took Daniella by the hand and led her back home to the girls.

*

Chapter 12
Cruel To Be Kind

August the 28th 2019

Daniella waited patiently outside the black leather curtain until Jake called. “Next!”

Daniella entered, completely naked, with an embarrassed look on her face. “Sorry about yesterday...” She stretched her arms and yawned.

Jake laughed. “Yes, I heard you had quite the busy night last night. Riksu and Lisa told me all about how you reaped them. Apparently they both want to do it again tonight, but this time conscious.”

Daniella smiled sheepishly. “It’s a lot harder than it looks...”

Jake nodded as he held up his favoured knife. “Helps if you have a good blade. Perhaps I’ll have a word with Artemis, see if we can’t at least get you some snips for Lisa’s tongue?”

Daniella smirked.

“So, how does it feel to be a reaper woman?” asked Jake curiously. “I know Riksu seems very proud of what she did on Lisa.”

Daniella nodded. “There is something very... empowering about dismembering your girlfriend.”

Jake stared at her.

“Oh god, that sounds awful.” said Daniella, dismayed. “I just mean it felt good to be able to do it myself and not have to rely on you.”

Jake chuckled, shook his head then he sighed and looked at Daniella like a proud parent. “It’s okay, I know what you mean. If a nasty job has to be done it feels good to be able to do it yourself.”

Daniella smiled then said. “That’s not all that happened last night.”

“No?” asked Jake.

“One of my other friends - a real good one by the name of Lucy - she slaughtered me last night.” said Daniella with a grin.

Jake’s jaw dropped.

“Well, she snapped my neck first so I didn’t feel anything.” said Daniella as she approached Jake. “But she did do it. Which means I don’t need you...” She poked Jake in the chest and giggled.

Jake chuckled and ran a hand through Daniella’s hair. “Well I am really happy for you, Dany, truly I am. Now, lets get you reaped.”

Daniella nodded and grinned. “Okay.”

Jake grabbed her arm and said. “You’ll have to send this Lucy of yours to me. See if I can’t teach her some tricks. I mean if she is gonna be taking over from me...”

Daniella giggled as Jake’s knife bit into her skin.

*

August the 28th 2019 - Sometime Later

The great shark swam into the underwater slaughter house as Daniella hung onto its fin.

Tom lunged forward, pulling Daniella away as Fred and George sliced up the shark.

Tom pulled out a knife and asked. “What did you mean by ‘If I know my way around a blade’?”

Daniella grinned and said. “Ask after a man named Jake, he works back there. Just seen to me actually. Pity is, he’s gay.”

“Oh...” said Tom as he grimaced.

Fred smirked. “Hello again, Dany.”

George groaned.

Daniella waved. “Hi.”

Tom rammed the hose down Daniella’s throat.

*

August the 28th 2019 - Sometime Later

Lisa lay on the table and giggled as Daniella and Riksu worked on either side of the table to remove her arms and legs.

Daniella wore her bikini and collar again and worked with a calm precision.

Riksu was efficient and focused but she would joke with Lisa and massage her as she worked.

Lucy and Kirsty were helping Hai and Hotaru finish processing the harvest from yesterday.

The actual arm bones and leg bones were fairly easy to process once the joints were removed so Hotaru had mostly carved them clean last night. The hands and feet were more tricky had been left over night in bowls of mead so that the alcohol would work with the natural putrefaction of the meat to make the bones easier to extract but it was still a fiddly time consuming job.

The scalps had been dried for the mean time since there wasn't currently any means of turning the hair into useful binding material, nor enough resources to make solving that problem a particularly pressing matter. Besides at the moment they only had 3 scalps so they could afford to let that number build up.

Riksu and Daniella worked swiftly and shared flirtatious glances over Lisa's body as they did so. Soon Lisa's lower arms were being distributed to the processing department of Lucy, Kirsty, Hai and Hotaru.

Kirsty looked much happier and worked better with the group. She laughed and joked as they processed the bones. She kept looking to Lucy for guidance and advice and even shared the occasional flirt with her, her usual disdain gone. Evidently the news that her wishes not to have her body harvested were respected and that Lucy had personally taken her body back to the sleeping quarters had made an impact upon Kirsty. Certainly the news that Daniella herself was harvested added to Kirsty's new found good mood.

Riksu and Daniella removed Lisa's upper arms easily then turned her over to they could start on her legs.

Kirsty received Lisa's upper left arm and started carving away at the flesh about the bones. "So are we going to do anything with the flesh once we've stripped it from the bones?"

Lucy snorted. "I bloody home not."

Hai glared at Kirsty. "If you expect me to know anything about that then I will personally process you myself."

Kirsty smirked. "Sorry. That was not what I meant." Then Kirsty looked at Hai curiously and added. "Though if you did want to place your lips about my flesh, I think I could be persuaded."

Lucy burst out laughing.

Hotaru said sagely. "My father used to use fish guts for chumming the water so he could get sharks."

"But we are sharks." said Kirsty.

Hotaru shrugged.

Hai smirked. "Maybe we could give it to the great Queen of Valhalla as a peace offering?"

Kirsty chuckled.

Lucy smirked. “Maybe I could go undercover? Your royal highness I present the flesh of the traitor and her girlfriend.”

Kirsty burst out laughing.

Riksu and Daniella removed Lisa’s lower legs and started working on detaching her upper legs.

Hai reached over to grab Lisa’s lower legs and said. “Actually I thought Kirsty would make the better spy.”

Lucy looked mildly annoyed for a moment.

Kirsty smirked as she carved the flesh from Lisa’s upper arm. “Ah yes because I am so sexy, charismatic and intelligent. Truly I am a master at manipulation.”

Lucy burst out laughing.

Hai worked on separating Lisa’s lower left leg from her left foot. It was delicate and precise work that required care and concentration with fine cuts. So Hai was calm and measured in what she said next as she focused almost entirely upon the joint before her. “Actually I thought Kirsty would be the perfect defector because when the Queen of Valhalla met her she was trying to get Daniella killed. Then just last night Daniella ordered her neck snapped it makes sense that Kirsty might get harvested against her will and so decide to defect to the ruler who could destroy her more pressing adversary.”

Lucy chuckled but her eyes were uncertain as she carved the flesh from Lisa’s bones.

Kirsty frowned. “But I like Daniella. She’s nice. Really, actually nice. Cute and funny too. Also the Queen of Valhalla poked my eyes out when I sided with her against Daniella while Daniella promised me clothes and welcomed me like a friend.”

“A friend that she snaps the neck of when convenient.” said Hai casually, without looking up from her work.

Hotaru was utterly absorbed by the tasks before her but she said. “The truth is, Kirsty, that you are a resource to Daniella. She is even unto herself. Lisa and Riksu supply the parts. I process the parts once they have been detached. Hai fetches the parts to be processed and helps me process them. Lucy is the muscle ensuring the suppliers do not prove inconvenient and you... Well I don’t really know where you belong. Either you will supply parts or you will process them as you do now or you will ensure the suppliers do not prove inconvenient. Unless of course the resource you provide is your very betrayal and unwillingness to be a resource.”

Kirsty fell silent, unsure what to say.

Riksu and Daniella finished removing Lisa’s legs then they flipped her back around.

Lisa giggled. “That was awesome. Thank you so much. I mean not quite as good as Jake but still so good.”

Riksu bowed her head. “It was an honour.”

Daniella stroked Lisa's cheek. "Thank you. Truly."

Lisa grinned.

Daniella walked over to Lucy and quietly tapped her on the shoulder. "It's time."

Lucy nodded and rose from the bench.

"So it's your turn now." said Lisa.

Riksu nodded. "I only hope I have half as much pleasure as you have."

Lisa giggled.

Lucy shuffled onto the table behind Lisa then reached out for neck. She muttered. "Sweet dreams."

Crack!

Lucy scooped up Lisa and carried her over to Hai so her scalp might be removed.

Riksu and Daniella held hands for a moment as they looked into each other's eyes.

"You don't have to do this." said Daniella seriously. "I mean we don't even know what we're going to do with the bones yet and you've already fulfilled your pledge to me. There is no shame in saying no."

Riksu nodded, a sad smile on her face. "And equally there is no shame in saying yes, Dany."

Riksu stroked Daniella's face then pointed to where Lucy say with Kirsty, Hai and Hotaru. "You want her to reap you like I want you to reap me."

Daniella nodded then looked back to Riksu and kissed her on the lips. "But I don't want to reap you."

Riksu smirked and shook her head. "You don't want to be the kind of person who wants to reap me but you do want to reap me. You like the feeling of power. You like how it feels to have such complete control over me. To know that you can quite literally take whatever you want from me."

Daniella bit her lip, unsure what to say.

Riksu smiled and kissed Daniella on the cheek. "It's okay, really. I like giving myself to you. I like that you want me, that you want to use me. I like the fact that there is a part of you - that you refuse to admit exists - which is very cold, calculating and smart."

Daniella looked Riksu in the eyes, clearly upset.

Riksu stroked Daniella's hair lovingly. "It's okay. I know you're afraid but I won't let you become a monster. You are my Queen and my Mistress but the duty of care extends both ways. As I reap Lisa so in turn you reap me and as you reap me so you are in turn reaped by Lucy. This is how it works and this is what makes sense."

Daniella ran her hand through Riksu's hair sadly. "But we still haven't had a chance to properly

explore each other. I want to know so much about you. I want to kiss you and hug you and...”

Riksu kissed Daniella on the lips, interrupting her, then pulled back. “We’ve got forever in this place, Dany, we’ll do all those things.”

Daniella grinned and pulled Riksu close so they could snog.

When Daniella pulled back something about her had changed. There was a cold strength to her posture and voice. “Lie on the table, Riksu.”

Riksu nodded, a smile on her face. “As you wish, my Queen.”

Riksu backed onto the table and watched Daniella with pride.

Daniella sidled to the left and picked up a shark tooth with which to cut Riksu, her predatory gaze didn’t leave Riksu as she sized her up and her mind ran through mental calculations about the best places to begin cutting.

Daniella felt a hand on her shoulder and heard Lucy ask. “How do you do that? Switch from seeing her as your girlfriend one moment to a beast to be slaughtered the next?”

Daniella replied with a smile. “How did you slaughter me?”

Lucy chuckled darkly. “You had made me complicit in the slaughter of my friends, I was annoyed and wanted revenge.”

Daniella nodded. She didn’t take her eyes from Riksu. “I guess I can understand that. I think for me it comes from feminist academia. The ability to take a world that has inspired and enthralled you with its amazing characters and concepts then slowly and carefully dissect it to reveal the ways in which it represents yet another brick in the wall of patriarchy.”

Lucy patted Daniella on the back. “Remind me never to talk to you about feminism.”

Daniella smirked. “Oh this isn’t feminist. This is everything feminism stands entirely opposed to, at least the bits I studied, but look at her. So small, slim and vulnerable. This won’t take long.”

Daniella strode towards Riksu and grabbed her lower left arm as she started sawing away at the tendons on the inside of her elbow.

Riksu moaned in delight.

Lucy sidled over to behind Kirsty and pat her on the shoulder. “I think you ought to watch this.”

Kirsty got up from the bench and stood with Lucy as she watched Daniella dismember Riksu.

Daniella bent Riksu’s left arm back on itself and cut through any muscle that got in the way as Riksu screamed with pleasure. A moment later Riksu’s lower left arm was separated. Daniella stepped to the right and started carving through the muscle at Riksu’s left shoulder.

Kirsty stared at Daniella in horrified amazement. “She’s really dismembering her own girlfriend?”

Lucy nodded. “And Riksu likes it, look.”

Kirsty looked at Riksu's face.

Riksu was moaning elatedly, bliss evident on her face.

Kirsty retched.

Daniella lifted Riksu's upper left arm up, twisted it in the socket then swiftly cut through the freshly exposed connective tissues until finally it was cut loose. Daniella chucked Riksu's upper left arm at Hai then flipped Riksu over so she could begun cutting away at the flesh behind Riksu's right knee.

Lucy nodded thoughtfully. "See this is what we need to do. Heck at this rate it won't be long before it's our turn."

Kirsty whipped her face around to glare at Lucy. "What?"

Daniella bent Riksu's right knee back on itself and cut through the exposed connective tissue. A moment later she chucked the separated lower right leg at Hai then she started slicing through Riksu's arse to separate her upper right leg from her body.

Riksu screaming elatedly. "Yes! Yes! Yes!..."

Lucy patted Kirsty on the back. "Don't worry, we aren't on the chipping block next, Daniella is."

Kirsty looked at Lucy like she was mad then she looked back to Daniella.

Daniella was twisting Riksu's upper right leg around in its socket as she cut it loose. A moment later Hai received Riksu's upper right leg and Daniella had vaulted the table to begin work slicing through the underside of Riksu's left knee.

"Why is she in such a hurry to get slaughtered?" asked Kirsty.

Lucy shrugged. "Beats me. I almost think it's a challenge to her. If she's going to do this, she's got to do this as efficiently and cleanly as possible."

"Right..." said Kirsty.

Daniella chucked Riksu's lower left leg at Hai and started sawing through Riksu's arse to remove her upper left leg.

"So we just cut her up like Daniella's doing to Riksu?" asked Kirsty.

Lucy nodded. "I think so. Though I could snap her neck first if you wanted?"

Daniella tossed Riksu's upper left leg at Hai then turned Riksu over so Daniella could begin sawing through the connective tissue of Riksu's right elbow.

Kirsty said. "Actually I think I would prefer it if she was conscious and capable of expressing clear and explicit enthusiastic consent."

"Ah..." said Lucy quietly. "Feminism again."

Daniella lobbed Riksu's lower right arm at Hai then lifted Riksu's upper right arm up so she could begin sawing through the connective tissue.

Kirsty glared at Lucy. "Consent is not feminism. It's just basic common decency."

Lucy nodded with a chuckle at Daniella and Riksu. "And what exactly does basic common decency have to do with that?"

Kirsty thought for a moment.

Daniella twisted Riksu's upper right arm around in its socket as shed cleaved through the last of the connective tissue until finally she tossed Riksu's separated upper right arm at Hai.

"Good point..." said Kirsty.

Daniella stood back for a moment and panted as she admired her work.

Riksu panted as she felt the waves of pleasure dissipate.

Daniella looked over at Lucy and Kirsty for a moment and smiled, then she looked to Riksu and felt a wave of love wash over her. Daniella darted to Riksu's side and started stroking Riksu's cheek with her right hand as she stroked Riksu's hair with her left. "Hey, honey..."

Riksu grinned and looked deep into Daniella's eyes. "You were magnificent."

Daniella smirked. "Well, I was better."

Daniella kissed Riksu on the cheek. "Thank you."

"My pleasure." said Riksu.

Daniella looked up at Lucy then lifted her left hand up and pointed at Riksu.

Lucy nodded.

Daniella gave a thumbs up with her left hand then she kissed Riksu on the lips and in a moment their tongues were entwined.

Lucy backed onto the table behind Riksu.

Daniella pulled back and said. "I love you."

Riksu giggled. "I love -"

Crack!

Daniella glared at Lucy.

Lucy shrugged.

Daniella sighed.

Lucy smirked and stroked Daniella's cheek. "You know you really are very cute."

Daniella glared at her. "My girlfriend is right here."

"You don't have to reciprocate." said Lucy with a smirk. "But you are cute. Especially when it comes to Riksu."

Daniella blushed and looked away.

Hai coughed politely.

Daniella saw Hai stood patiently beside the table as she had been talking to Lucy.

Daniella hurriedly stood back to let Hai retrieve Riksu.

Lucy smirked as her eyes explored Daniella's body. "So you're interested?"

When Hai was gone Daniella vaulted the table and hugged Lucy. Daniella kissed Lucy on the cheek and grinned. "I like what you did last night."

Lucy grinned and kissed Daniella's neck as she stroked her hair with one hand then squeezed her bum with the other. "Good..."

Kirsty coughed.

Lucy pulled back hurriedly and said awkwardly. "Good because... We need the resources and Kirsty here needs some practical hands on experience in – Umm... Slaughter."

Daniella nodded, instantly professional. "Of course. It only makes sense that if we are going to be expanding operations at some point that we have as many experienced hands as possible."

Kirsty frowned then looked to Lucy.

Lucy was clueless how to interpret the look.

Kirsty sighed then asked. "Do you really like it then? The slaughter?"

Daniella grinned and looked at Lucy meaningfully. "Yes... Yes, I like the sensation of being under another's control, of breaking before their will."

Lucy grinned.

Daniella added. "There's a guy I see regularly. He's my reaper and at first I didn't like it. He was cold, clinical and quick and I was so new to the whole thing so I wasn't familiar enough with my healing abilities but then I asked him to make it nice..."

Daniella blushed.

Kirsty stared at her. "He made cutting you apart nice?"

Daniella nodded. "And once pandora's box was opened..." Daniella giggled then wrapped her arms around Lucy's neck. "I want this more than I think I have ever wanted sex."

Lucy ran her hand through Daniella's hair and said. "I shall have to speak to this, Jake."

Kirsty nodded. "My butcher just sort of cuts me. I mean he's not mean but I'm just meat to him."

"Oh, Jake is magnificent." said Daniella as she looked longingly into Lucy's green eyes. "But he's gay and under normal circumstances we probably wouldn't even be friends."

"But us...?" sasked Lucy with a grin.

Daniella kissed Lucy on the lips then giggled.

"Get on the table." said Lucy sternly.

Daniella kissed Lucy the cheek and whispered. "Thank you." Then Daniella backed onto the table.

Lucy said. "Right, get a tooth. It's time to dismember her."

"I'm sorry?"

"We need to cut through her joints so Hai and Hotaru can process her bones." explained Lucy.

"You're going to do what to her?"

Lucy laughed. "We've just been over this, Kirsty. We're going to cut her arms and legs off then snap her neck so we can remove her scalp."

"That wasn't me asking those questions." said Kirsty.

Lucy turned around and saw a short slender brunette wearing a leather jacket and jeans. "Who are you and why should I care who you think?"

The short woman grinned devilishly. "My name is Artemis and Dany is my pet. You would be well advised to stand aside."

"Shit." said Lucy, suddenly scared. "I am dreadfully sorry but please understand that she is consenting."

"I am sure she is." said Artemis, all sugary sweet. "But she's mine and I have not given you consent. Stand aside."

Lucy nodded and stood aside.

Artemis leaned over the table and stroked Daniella's cheek. "Come on, poppet, walkies."

Daniella felt herself become lost in Artemis's gaze and said. "Please, don't hurt Lucy. I want this."

"I know..." said Artemis as she stroked Daniella's hair. "But I want you home, now. You understand?"

Daniella nodded and rose from the table.

Kirsty asked. “Is this the woman who can get me clothes?”

“Oh, you want clothes do you?” said Artemis as she turned to Kirsty suddenly.

“Just a bikini would do.” said Kirsty hurriedly then she grinned. “But I would love a nice jumper and a decent set of jeans.”

“Alright, lets get some measurements and I’ll see what I can do.” said Artemis as she pulled out a tape measure.

Daniella hugged Lucy. “We’ll do it tomorrow, yeah?”

“If she lets you back, you mean?” said Lucy sadly.

Daniella smirked. “She’ll come around to you.”

Lucy stroked Daniella’s hair sadly. “I’ll reap Riksu for you when you’re gone.”

Daniella grinned. “Good. Those delicate arms and legs need a good pruning.”

Lucy smirked. “And maybe I’ll see if she’s interested in the idea of an open relationship?”

Daniella blushed. “You should definitely do that.”

Lucy hugged Daniella and squeezed her tight. “Make sure Jake gives you a slice from me, yeah?”

“Absolutely.” said Daniella.

Lucy kissed Daniella on the cheek and stroked her hair. “Have a good night, honey.”

“You too.” said Daniella then she whispered playefullu. “Maybe find that bar tender?”

Lucy smirked and let Daniella go. “That sounds like a plan, yeah.”

Daniella grinned.

Artemis finished taking Kirsty’s measurements then said. “Right, since I’m taking Dany, you can get on the table.”

Kirsty froze.

Lucy said. “Excuse me...”

Daniella said. “Artemis, it’s really not important.”

“But it must be.” said Artemis as she turned to Daniella. “I mean I assume it must be for you to be laid out on the table like that with this Lucy planning to harvest your bones and scalp. Indeed I think I’m right in assuming that two other girls have already been harvested so it’s not like this is a rare one time thing.”

Daniella frowned.

Artemis turned back to Kirsty. “Look, I can’t make you do anything you don’t want to do but either it’s important enough for my girl to be on the table or it’s not and if it is... Well, I think a big girl like you can rise to the occasion, don’t you?”

Kirsty thought for a moment then looked past Artemis to Daniella and she smiled. “Okay...”

“That’s it.” said Artemis as she poked Kirsty on the nose. “Now, go on, lie down.”

Kirsty nodded and started backing onto the table.

Lucy cried. “Hey, now, you don’t have to do this!”

Kirsty shrugged. “She’s getting me clothes. Just snap my neck if it stops being fun.”

Artemis smiled and pat Lucy on the back then said very sweetly. “You were going to butcher someone I care about. Now you can butcher someone you care about.”

Lucy gritted her teeth and picked up a shark tooth.

Artemis turned to Daniella once more and ran a hand through her hair. “Honey, we need to get out of here quick because I’ve got a long night planned her us and that means I’m going to need you to properly go walkies with me.”

Daniella grinned. “Anything for you.”

Artemis pulled a leash out of a pocket then clipped one end onto Daniella’s collar. “You really are a very good girl, Dany.”

Daniella blushed.

Artemis wrapped the leash around her right arm then she took Daniella’s face in her hands and started stroking her cheeks with one hand as she stroked her hair with the other. “You are my precious adorable baby girl and I love you very very much.”

Daniella felt herself begin to fall within herself as Artemis’s face filled her vision, her voice filled her ears and her touch overwhelmed her. She started panting.

Artemis kissed Daniella on the forehead and said. “It’s okay, I’ve got you.”

Daniella felt Artemis’s hands travel down from the top of her head to the small of her back then she fell forward onto her hands as she panted with exhilaration.

“Good girl...” said Artemis as the beast subsumed Daniella.

*

Chapter 13
Reaper, tailor, revolutionary, pet.

August the 28th 2019 - Thirty Minutes Later

Daniella came to her senses halfway through a bowl of pedigree chum. She frowned and nearly gagged but forced herself to swallow. As she got her feet she asked. “Do you have any mints?”

Artemis was sat at the dinner table eating a pie and chips. “No...”

“Oh...” said Daniella with a grimace as she took to a seat beside Artemis. For a moment she assumed she’d been unleashed, but then the lead pulled slack. “So...”

“So I’m eating my dinner.” said Artemis with a smile. “I thought you were happy with the dog food, sorry.”

“Dog food?” said Daniella.

“Well yes...” said Artemis as she ate. “They don’t make sylph food unfortunately and besides it says on the box that it’s got added vitamins and minerals to give you healthy teeth and a glossy coat.”

Daniella stared at Artemis for a long moment then she picked up a chip and ate it. Then she picked up another chip and another and another...

Artemis finished her pie and saw Daniella lifting the last chip to her mouth. “What have you done?”

“You had no mints.” said Daniella before she dropped the chip in her mouth, chewed it and swallowed.

Artemis smirked, leaned forward and stroked Daniella’s cheek. “Alright, I’ll get mints in for next time.”

Daniella grinned.

Artemis stopped stroking Daniella, unclipped the leash from Daniella’s collar and rose from her chair. “Come on, I’ve got something to show you.”

“Ooh...” said Daniella as she rose to follow.

“Do you remember that woman getting annoyed at your having clothes?” asked Artemis as they walked.

“Well yeah, she nicked that dress you gave me.” said Daniella irritably. “And the shoes and the tiara.”

“Excellent.” said Artemis with a grin.

Daniella paused and bit her lip.

Artemis paused, turned around and frowned. “Well obviously, not excellent that she upset you but that’s why I gave you them.”

Daniella glared at her. “She snapped my neck, stripped me and stole my clothes...”

Artemis nodded solemnly. “And she is a very bad person for doing so but I know her, once an idea gets in her head she won’t stop until she’s achieved it. If I ignored the issue she’d have taken your bikini or tried to hurt you to get at me, possibly worse. And if I just gave her the clothes she’d think she could keep asking for things. So I gave you a crown and clothing fit for a queen knowing that she would take it and feel satisfied enough having done so to leave you alone.”

Daniella kept glaring at Artemis. “I liked that dress.”

“And you were very pretty in it.” said Artemis with a smile. “Besides, as I was saying, I now know for certain how the Queen can have clothes and I’ll show you if you like.”

“Fine.” said Daniella, still upset.

Artemis turned around and started walking again.

Daniella followed reluctantly.

They were in the living room now and something like one of those old tin bath tubs had been set up in the middle of it with a few different plastic bins and boxes and a couple of trays of knives of different shapes and sizes. Artemis walked right past it as though it was the most normal thing in the world and didn’t need mentioning. Instead she picked up a large patch of leather from a chair and presented it to Daniella. “What do you think?”

Daniella felt it and shrugged.

“How does it feel?”

Daniella struggled for words. “It’s leather... It feels... Leathery.”

Artemis smirked. “The leather feels leathery does it?”

Daniella grimaced. “Well I don’t know. I’m not a leather expert.”

Artemis nodded. “I know. I just found it funny.”

“Then why did you ask me?” asked Daniella with a scowl. “I’m your pet, isn’t my job to eat your food and look cute?”

Artemis snorted then leaned toward Daniella and stroked her back. “Well you do that very well.”

Daniella grinned.

Artemis looked at Daniella for a long moment as she smiled and stroked her.

“So what is it then?” asked Daniella bluntly

“It’s your skin.” said Artemis happily.

Daniella stared at Artemis. “What?”

“I had it treated using modern fast practices obviously but the point is that this is your skin and it is leather.” said Artemis.

Daniella’s mind started to build up speed as she pieced things together. “But if you can turn my skin into leather that means...”

Artemis nodded. “I said clothes weren’t given to women in the project but that they weren’t banned

and the Queen had the resources to make clothes if she wished. And I checked leather can be tanned using - at various stages - excrement, urine or brains. All of which you can also provide."

Daniella smiled. "I can clothe my knights."

Artemis stared at Daniella, incredulous. "Your knights?"

"My Undine Knights." said Daniella with pride.

Artemis looked blankly back at her.

"Yeah, it's a bit of a long story... Point is I'm sort of known as the Queen In Waiting now and I have knights." said Daniella awkwardly.

Artemis chuckled. "You have been busy."

Daniella nodded and then a thought occurred to her. "Actually, what do you know about a man named the Farsh-nuke?"

"Where the hell did you hear that name!?" asked Artemis, suddenly angry.

Daniella's face fell and she closed her eyes. "Shit."

"Dany!? Dany!? This is important! Where the fuck did you hear that name!?" asked Artemis.

Daniella started backing away out of the room and scratched her head as though bored. "Actually you know what I think I must have imagined it. Yeah... Yeah... I must have dreamed it. It really doesn't matter."

"Don't you dare run away from me girl!" snarled Artemis.

Daniella froze in the doorway and shrugged. "I said the wrong thing. I said a whole bunch of wrong things. I'm sorry to have wasted your time. I might just go home now."

"You are home!" cried Artemis.

Daniella nodded. "Yeah, I thought I was..."

Daniella turned to go.

Artemis's eyes darted about the room as her mind raced then she cried. "I know you're plotting an escape attempt!"

Daniella groaned. She turned around, walked back into the living room and shut the door behind her. "I'm sorry, Artemis. I thought I could trust you. I was wrong."

Artemis shook her head. "Dany, I knew from the moment I saw you that you were here for revolution."

"How?" asked Daniella. The emotion drained from her voice as a cold strength took over.

"I know what the guys who get women for this place are like." said Artemis seriously. "I know how

they bind a woman. Your bindings were way too loose. That means you were freed mid transport and that means you were not imprinted on by the grand master which makes you a very dangerous and important woman."

"And that's why you've been giving me the special treatment, right?" said Daniella, as she advanced on Artemis. "Your bosses told you to keep an eye on me in case I ever started to pose a threat, right?"

Daniella clenched her hands into fists.

Artemis held her ground. "No. No, I've been helping you. I've been giving you the strength, energy and self confidence needed to lead your revolution."

"Then why does me knowing about the Farsh-nuke terrify you so much?" asked Daniella, angrily.

"Because if the Farsh-nuke is here then everyone you know is in danger." said Artemis seriously.

Daniella froze in her tracks and bit her lip.

"Look, I know trust is hard to have right now. You're scared that I'm gonna sell you and your friends out, I'm scared that the Farsh-nuke could be here, but we have to try and resolve this for everyone's sakes." said Artemis earnestly. "No matter what has happened you're still my girl and I will always do everything in my power to protect you and make you happy."

Daniella sighed. "If this is a trap..."

"If this were a trap there are a billion different ways you could be taken out but it's not." said Artemis irritably. "This is the woman who took you into her home, clothed you and fed you asking to know where you found out a name. I don't need to know who, I don't need to know when. I just need to know how."

Daniella thought for a long moment then said. "The man who runs this place made videos mentioning him."

"Oh, thank God!" cried Artemis, relieved. She waved away Daniella's concerns. "It's okay, I don't need to know any more."

Artemis flung her arms around Daniella and muttered. "He's not here... He's not here... He's not here..."

Daniella frowned. "You're not mad that I know that information..."

"Of course not." said Artemis as she pulled back to look Daniella in the eye. "You were freed and you probably freed more than a few others, if not the whole transport's worth. You have friends on the outside who are feeding you information. That's good. That's useful. It means your revolution has a greater chance of success when you spring it."

"Then who is the Farsh-nuke and why does he make you so scared?" asked Daniella.

"It's a very long story and one we don't have time for today." said Artemis earnestly. "But I promise you, I will explain who and what he is later."

Daniella looked at Artemis uncertainly. “So you’re really okay with the fact I’m planning to lead an army to escape the island?”

Artemis nodded. “You’re my brave warrior and I will never stop being here for you. Even when you escape I’d still like to be standing beside you, holding your leash.”

Daniella stared at Artemis. “Really?”

Artemis stroked Daniella’s hair. “Really. You’re mine and nobody is going to come between us.”

“But I have a girlfriend.” said Daniella.

Artemis smirked. “Then I will be thrilled to take on another pet or meet a new friend.”

“And what about Lucy?” asked Daniella uncertainly.

Artemis froze for a moment then said. “Why don’t you go for a shower? We can continue talking once you’re out.”

“Okay...” said Daniella as she turned to go find the shower.

*

August the 28th 2019 - 45 Minutes Later

Daniella stepped out of the shower, completely naked and dripping wet. She cried out “Artemis, where are the towels!?”

“You won’t be needing one! Head to the living room!” came Artemis’s reply.

Daniella shrugged and headed to the living room.

Artemis was standing behind the door when Daniella entered and closed it behind her.

Daniella stared at Artemis. “What are you doing?”

Artemis frowned. “I did not intend this to seem so creepy. I just needed the door shut.”

“Right...” said Daniella as she noting that the tin bath tub was now full of bubbling water and there was a stool behind it.

“I received a message from Jake yesterday. A rather panicked message, about you.” said Artemis, as if by way of explanation.

“Uh-huh...” said Daniella as she mentally analysed the different knives and instruments on the trays near the stool.

“Jake is a professional, a very skilled professional who cares a lot about those it is his duty to work with but that is all he is: A professional trained to do a very particular job...” explained Artemis.

Daniella’s eyes met Artemis’s. “What did he say exactly?”

Artemis reached out a hand to caress Daniella’s face. “He said that my precious girl had developed

a crush on him because of his skills with the blade."

Daniella blushed.

"It's okay..." said Artemis as she reached out her other hand to the small of Daniella's back. "If my girl wants to be reaped then she'll get the best darned reaping in the 'verse."

Artemis kissed Daniella on the forehead. "Get in the tub."

Daniella smiled, turned around and stepped foot in the tub. She gasped. "It's hot."

"And ever so slightly acidic." said Artemis with a smirk.

Artemis sat on the stool then fetched a hair brush and hair tie from her pocket. She started gathering up Daniella's hair and brushed it straight. "So this is what is going to happen. We are going to take this nice and slow. We are going to flay your skin and carve the flesh from your bones, starting with your feet and hands but when we get to your head and torso we are going to very carefully remove your internal organs. At least those that can be removed without affecting your ability to communicate. Then we'll remove your scalp and your eyes and then I will very carefully remove the last of you, piece by piece. First your tongue, then your teeth, then your lungs before finally I snip off your brain and carry your hearts off to somewhere warm to recover. Then I will leave your bones and skin to soak overnight as I see about storing your organs and flesh."

Daniella shivered with excitement as she asked nervously. "You can really do that? Remove everything from me and have me feel it all?"

Artemis leaned so close to Daniella's neck that Daniella could feel her breath. "Oh yes, I am very experienced at this."

"How?" asked Daniella.

Artemis chuckled. "That is a story for another day. You are what's important right now."

Daniella sighed. "Okay... Does this mean you're okay with Lucy reaping me then?"

"Absolutely." said Artemis cheerfully. "We can reap you together. Just remember to add skinning you to her duties next time."

Daniella nodded as a grin spread across her face. "As you wish, my mistress."

Artemis chuckled then leaned forward to kiss Daniella on the cheek. "Now if there aren't any more questions I'd like to focus on the task at hand."

Daniella nodded.

Artemis pressed a button on a remote control.

Bleeding Out by Imagine Dragons started to play.

Artemis gathered up Daniella's hair into a ponytail and secured it with a hair tie. Artemis hung Daniella's ponytail over the edge of the tub then she picked up a knife.

*

August the 29th 2019

Daniella woke up naked in the bath. She cleaned her teeth and had a shower then headed downstairs to the kitchen where there was the most marvellous smell of cooking meat.

Artemis was wearing a piny over her work uniform as she cooked breakfast.

Daniella stood in the doorway and just watched Artemis for a moment.

Artemis reached over to her left for a plate and started lifting fried eggs and fried bread from the pan to the plate

Daniella smiled and entered the room with a careful creep so as to not make a sound. She sat down in a wooden dining chair and observed the empty food bowl and empty water bowl beside a selection of leashes. She smirked and picked up a can of dog food to examine it. She wondered aloud. “Have you ever actually considered getting a dog?”

Artemis snorted. “I’m sorry?”

Artemis was still busy cooking so she didn’t look around.

“I’m not complaining about being your, umm...” said Daniella as she examined the tin. “I was just wondering. You seem like such a dog person.”

Artemis chuckled as she turned the meat over in the pan. “I’m really not. I don’t have the time for a dog and there’s nowhere to run it.”

“Cat then?” asked Daniella as she put down the tin of food.

“Nah...” said Artemis dismissively. “Selfish little psychopaths.”

“Cute though...” said Daniella.

Artemis finished plating up the food, turned off the hobs and set the pans and cooking utensils in to soak then she bought the plates round to the table before Daniella. Artemis hugged Daniella and kissed her on the forehead. “You are the best pet I could have. Obedient, loving, adorable and independent enough that I can actually live my own life.”

Daniella blushed and smiled sheepishly.

“Go on, eat.” said Artemis with a smile.

Daniella nodded. “Thank you.”

Artemis left the room as Daniella picked up a knife and fork to dig in.

A proper full English Breakfast with pork sausages, black puddings, bacon, fried eggs, hash browns, fried tomatoes, fried bread, mushrooms and baked beans.

Artemis re-entered carrying what looked like a duvet it was so large. “Get up, this is for you.”

Daniella stood up and watched as Artemis unfurled the bundle to reveal that it was infact an incredibly warm and fluffy dressing gown.

“There...” said Artemis with a grin. “Much better. Carry on.”

Daniella sat down and ate in silence as Artemis sat opposite, a smile on her face.

Finally Daniella finished her breakfast and said. “You seem... different. Has something happened?”

Artemis sighed and shook her head. “It just... It doesn’t get old. It never ever does.” Artemis pulled her phone out of her pocket and pressed a button to make it project an image on the wall to her left and Daniella’s right. “That was all that was left of you last night.”

Daniella studied the projected image. Three bloody masses in a circle against a white background. “What am I looking at?”

Artemis set her phone down on the table so the image would remain stable as she fetched a lazer pointer out of her pocket to indicate the bloody masses. “These are the unholy trinity of the Wereshark’s survival.” The red dot hovered around one of the masses that was more grey. “That is the heart of the shark.” Moving clockwise round the dot came to a white mass. “That is the heart of the wolf.” The dot moved clockwise again to what was now a more recognisable red mass. “And that is the heart of humans.” The dot looped round in a circle through each of the hearts. “Together they form a trinary vascular system that keeps the body healing.”

Daniella stared at the image. “But how is this possible? That my memories and personality and everything can heal from just that.”

Artemis reached out a hand to stroke the back of Daniella’s head. “Because the wereshark has a survivor’s dna. It is driven by the will to survive, its only motivation is conquer, dominate and reproduce. The hearts act as a kind of emergency backup for the brain and each can grow replacements for the others quite safely but it’s even possible to regrow an entire body from one single still functioning heart valve under the right circumstances. And of course the hearts’ only required function to the body is to pump blood so it is entirely possible with today’s technology to remove the hearts from a wereshark and keep them alive with mechanical pumps or transplant substitutes until the nascent regenerative power of the blood in a living wereshark body regrows the unholy trinity itself.”

Daniella closed her eyes and forced herself to look way from the image. “Are you saying that my body, my brain, could have continued living without me last night?”

Artemis grabbed Daniella’s hand and held it. “You’re still alive. You’re still here. You’re still my baby girl.”

Daniella opened her eyes and looked Artemis in hers. “Tell me. Please.”

Artemis nodded.

Daniella snatched her hand away. “I know I asked for this and I know I liked it and I know that this is not your fault but I need to think about this.”

“Let me show you something.” said Artemis.

Daniella bit her lip and folded her arms, glad of the dressing gown.

“Please...” said Artemis.

Daniella shut her eyes for a moment then nodded.

Artemis rose from the table then waited in the doorway for Daniella to follow.

Artemis led Daniella into the living room where the tin tub still sat. Her bones and skin had been left to soak and the stench of rotting flesh made Daniella sick, the sight of her own empty skull didn’t help.

“I put the meat in the deep freeze, seems a shame to waste it since it’s perfectly edible and far more ethically sourced than most of what you just ate.” explained Artemis.

Daniella stared at Artemis in horror. “You’re going to eat me?”

“Only at Christmass and Easter.” said Artemis with a shrug then she ran forward and picked up a large glass jar filled with what looked like vinegar.

“That better not be what I think it is?” asked Daniella.

“It’s your brain.” said Artemis with a smile. “I think I’ll have it scanned into a computer then have a replica made out of rubber.”

“So to be clear, your response to my existential dread at the possibility of having actually died last night is to tell me you’re going to eat that me’s flesh and turn her brain into a toy?” asked Daniella bluntly.

Artemis frowned and put down the jar. “My response it to show you that you can witness this.”

“If my body could have survived without my hearts then the fact that hearts are all that was left of me means I died last night.” said Daniella pointedly.

Artemis shook her head. “Consciousness is an act performed by many players. It doesn’t matter which muscles carry on the performance, what matters is that the performance continues. If you are going to react like one of the players ceasing to be in attendance means the performance is dead then I have news for you, you are dying all the time.”

Daniella stared at Artemis.

Artemis was vehement. “The longest living cell in the human body has a lifespan of seven years. Humans are constantly dying and being replaced. For a wereshark sylph such as yourself that idea is even more ludicrous. You’ve been here what 4 days, each day losing a brain that could have survived without you, that’s four more times you’ve died plus the death you’re about to suffer when you see Jake today and the next day and the next...”

There was fire in Artemis’s eyes now. “And if that’s bad, what about your hearts? Don’t you have a duty not to deny them the possibility of creating copies of yourself? I could always just take a copy for myself and leave you to endure the existential horror of dying over and over alone?”

Daniella’s mouth opened and closed mutely several times as she tried to speak but couldn’t find the

words.

“You’re alive.” said Artemis earnestly. “You are alive and you are still you. And hell, fuck it, even if you did die last night you went out well didn’t you?”

Daniella nodded and said quietly. “I loved it...”

Artemis nodded and approached Daniella, her hands reached out to stroke her face and hair. “It was good, wasn’t it?”

Daniella blushed and smiled.

Artemis kissed her on the forehead then said. “You are a mighty unstoppable immortal goddess and you are my precious baby girl but most people aren’t so lucky. They can’t just grow a new brain. That’s why Jake removes yours every day, because brains as healthy as yours are hard to come by and we know so very little about how they work.”

“And that one?” asked Daniella as she pointed to the brain in the jar.

“Well I did say I would scan it into a computer.” said Artemis with a smile. “Might be good to get working on a backup for my baby just in case.”

Daniella smirked. “Well if you want a back up you’re free to take a copy.”

Artemis chuckled. “I might hold you to that but there is something I want to get before I do.”

Daniella grinned. “I think I might quite like to be your spare. Just have you take me out occasionally to stroke me and feed me before you stick me back in the broom closet.”

“Oh, chest freezer, surely?” said Artemis with a grin.

Daniella nodded. “Well I guess if you’re already keeping some of me there...”

Artemis burst out laughing.

Daniella hugged Artemis and squeezed her tight. “Thank you. Even if I did die, thank you so very, very, much. Words can’t do justice to how good that felt and I shall have to find some way to teach Lucy to be even half as good.”

“Well I do have a recording you could have.” said Artemis with a smile.

Daniella pulled back and stared at Artemis. “You recorded a snuff film with me?”

“It’s not a snuff film.” said Artemis innocently. “I was just recording it for the sake of posterity. Our first reaping together. There’s nothing creepy about that is there?”

Daniella was flabbergasted. “You have a video of yourself skinning and butchering a blonde woman while they are still alive. That is a snuff film.”

Artemis shrugged. “Well you enjoyed it, the video shows that very clearly.”

“You’ve watched it?” said Daniella, aghast.

“Just to check the video recorded okay.” said Artemis casually. “I had a couple of backups from a few different positions in case it wasn’t.”

Daniella looked Artemis right in the eyes and placed her hands on her shoulders then said slowly. “If that gets out onto the internet you will never see the light of day again.”

Artemis nodded. “Which is why I have my computer entirely disconnected from even the local intranet with a separate machine acting as a quarantine device to safely surf from.”

“This is not the first film you’ve made is it?” asked Daniella suspiciously.

Artemis smirked. “How do you think I taught Jake to get so good?”

Daniella stammered. “H-h-how...? Wh-wh-who...?”

“Lets just say me and the Queen of Valhalla have history.” said Artemis with a chuckle.

Daniella froze as her mind involuntarily replayed events from last night with the Queen of Valhalla instead. After a moment she said. “You must have had an awful lot of meat to deal with...”

Artemis nodded. “I think I used it to win over some of the guards. Every guy likes a woman who can cook.”

Daniella snorted. “You didn’t...”

Artemis grinned.

Daniella burst out laughing.

Artemis said. “I could make you up a copy if you liked?”

The laughter died in Daniella’s throat. “You mean fry me up some long pork? Would the Queen of Valhalla really agree to that?” Daniella caught herself. “Why am I asking? Eww! Ewww! No! No. No I do not want... No.”

Artemis put her hands on her hips and frowned. “Really? Really? I ask if you want a copy and your mind leaps to cannibalism?”

Daniella frowned then said. “Well you are going to eat me?”

“That’s different. You’re my girl. No stranger than swallowing cum.” said Artemis dismissively.

Daniella smirked. “So if me and the Queen decided to tip the velvet there’d be absolutely nothing wrong with asking for a slice of her arse?”

Artemis shrugged. “What two or more consenting adults decide to do without harming others or seriously harming themselves is up to them.”

Daniella shook her head. “I’m sorry, I just don’t buy that, cannibalism is cannibalism. There is absolutely no way us healing or being in a committed relationship would make that different.”

An image of Riksu moaning with pleasure as Daniella carved away at her with a shark tooth, her tooth, flashed before Daniella's eyes.

Daniella shook her head.

An image of Riksu spluttering for breath as Daniella held her head under the water flashed before Daniella.

Daniella closed her eyes.

An image of Riksu trapped in a cage struggling for breath desperately as Daniella, now a great shark, circled her, smelling her suffering and feeling her hearts beat fast appeared before Daniella.

Daniella bit her lip.

An image of Riksu lying on a gigantic dinner plate with the rest of a full English breakfast appeared before Daniella with Riksu's voice ringing in her ears "I like giving myself to you. I like that you want me, that you want to use me."

"Imaginations can be very unhelpful at times can't they?" said Artemis.

Daniella nodded.

Artemis embraced Daniella and stroked the back of her head. "Look, why don't you go see Jake and I can find a way for you to have that video and the pictures I took. I might see if I can't also find some advice about tanning leather and how to make bone tools?"

"Thank you." said Daniella with a weak smile.

"Our lives are strange." said Artemis. "We don't have VR or AR or video games or social media. All we have in this place is our bodies and the fact you can heal so strange pursuits are bound to fill the time. That is okay. At least so long as we remember that humans operate by a different set of rules."

Daniella nodded.

Artemis slid the dressing gown off Daniella and put it on an armchair.

Daniella asked. "What if- What if I'm turning into something- Something bad?"

Artemis slid a finger down her arm, marvelling as Daniella shivered at the sensation. "Then you can take comfort from my ability to utterly destroy you with ease."

Daniella grinned. "Why does that turn me on?"

Artemis grinned. "Because you are my very precious girl and very precious girls understand and appreciate just how truly delicate they are."

Artemis kissed Daniella on the forehead then pat her on the bum. "Lets get you to Jake."

*

Chapter 14
Taking Things Up A Level

August the 29th 2019 - Fifteen Minutes Later

Daniella stepped through the curtains, strode past the screen explaining what was about to happen to her and stood naked before Jake as he wiped the blood off his blades and washed his gloved hands in a sink.

“There’s nobody else behind me.” said Daniella with a smile.

“I know...” said Jake rather condescendingly as he rinsed his blades under a tap. “I have already seen to Lisa and Riksu, and also two others who said that they knew you.”

“Oh?” asked Daniella with a raised eyebrow as she crossed her arms before her chest.

“Yeah...” said Jake as he dried his blades with a roll of cloth. “A tall kinda muscley blonde with a south London accent and a brunette with a valley girl accent who seemed incredibly timid.”

Jake turned from his blades and looked to Daniella. “Sound familiar?”

Daniella nodded. “What’d they say?”

Jake leaned back against his work station and shrugged. “They came in together, said they were friends of yours, that you had recommended my services and asked that I give them a ‘Good Time’ with very audible quotes around those words because in their opinion it was why you liked it when they reaped you.”

Daniella sighed. “That’ll be Lucy and Kirsty. Lucy’s the girl I was telling you about who reaped me and Kirsty? Well I guess when I was unable to attend yesterday and she was asked to fill in for me she must have liked it enough to go along as well. How were they?”

Jake shrugged. “I see a lot of girls, a LOT of girls, but so far as I can tell that brunette - Kirsty?”

Daniella nodded.

Jake nodded before continuing. “Well she must not have had a good reaper. I felt bad touching her. I mean this isn’t exactly a job that fills me with the warm fuzzies at the best of times but I get the sense that she had a really really bad time of it. I could see the blonde one, Lucy, giving her encouragement and support. It was kind of tense at first, you never know what a frightened animal might do but once the first cut was made I could feel her relax into me. Those short quick pants becoming deep sighs. I mean she’s no screamer but the elation and sense of relief was no less evident.”

Daniella whistled and clapped.

Jake smirked.

“We should call you the sylph whisperer.” said Daniella with a smile. “Hopefully that means Kirsty will be more willing to let me have her body in future.”

Jake chuckled. “I think you may have competition on that front if Lucy is anything to go by.”

Daniella glared at Jake. “Pardon?”

“I know she sounds like an extra from a Danny Dyer film but she’s a smart one that girl.” said Jake. “I mean you talk as I work but Lucy just watches and you can see her working stuff out as she does. Heck she experimented as I reaped her, tensing and untensing her muscles to see how it felt as I cut and how I altered my posture to do so. She watches and learns and I wouldn’t be surprised if she had plans for you tonight.”

Daniella grinned. “You think so?”

Jake nodded. “But you didn’t meet her blade yesterday. Why not?”

“Artemis.” said Daniella with a smile.

Jake frowned and staring at Daniella. He strode forward awkwardly and went to fetch his favourite knife. “Oh yeah? Did she say anything?”

Daniella nodded. “She said that you sent her a message about me... Yeah. Why do you ask?”

Jake shrugged and found himself organising his various knives awkwardly. “I just wondered...”

Daniella chuckled and uncrossed her arms. “Well, thank you. Aside from some existential weirdness, because of your message I had an amazing night last night.”

Jake looked over his shoulder sheepishly. “What are you saying exactly?”

“Artemis reaped me.” said Daniella with quiet pride.

Jake turned to look at Daniella more fully. “Are you serious?”

Daniella nodded. “From head to foot she took everything... And oh it was... Glorious.”

Jake smiled. “So you’re not angry at me? You’re not angry that I told her?”

Daniella shook her head and reached out to grab Jake by the shoulders. “No, I’m not angry. Artemis is my mistress and my owner. You are my friend and my reaper, if you were concerned for me you were right to tell her.”

Jake smirked. “I’m your friend, am I?”

Daniella nodded. “For me this... What we do... It feels more potent and overwhelming than any fuck I have ever had but I respect that to you it’s just a job.”

Jake nodded. “Well I knew I was good, I didn’t know I was quite that good.”

Jake pulled Daniella into a hug. “As it goes though I’ll keep you in mind in case my partner ever decides to spice up the bedroom.”

Jake spun Daniella round in his arms and backed off to get a better view. “And besides you do have the cutest bum.”

Daniella giggled.

Jake pulled Daniella close and slid his left hand along her left arm as his right hand bought the knife into position. “I’ll see if I can’t send a strap on your way so Riksu can pound that peach you’ve got there.”

Daniella groaned as her left arm came off in Jake’s hands.

Jake set the arm aside then turned Daniella round again.

Daniella smirked. “Oh, I think I’m going to be pounding Riksu. Not the other way round.”

Jake smirked. “Perhaps a ball gag as well then? Perfect for the submissive who loves to scream.”

Daniella groaned as her right arm was removed.

Jake placed Daniella’s arm on the conveyor belt.

Daniella panted. “I could always remove her tongue.”

Jake nodded then whipped his fingers between Daniella’s lips and came away with her tongue.

Daniella frowned and stared at the floppy pink thing as it was placed on the conveyor belt.

Jake conspicuously clicked the snips he’d picked up without Daniela noticing. “A lesson I learned the hard way. If you’re going to have a relationship built on a power imbalance, sometimes it pays to be surprising.”

Daniella glared at Jake and pouted.

Jake chuckled and stroked the back of Daniella’s hair. “You’re a good girl, Dany, and you have a very pretty tongue that you clearly love making use of but there are other ways to achieve the same ends.”

Daniella raised an eyebrow.

Jake stared at her pointedly.

Daniella sighed and nodded.

Jake reached for another knife and started removing Daniella’s jaws.

*

August the 29th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up naked, floating in water, looking up at a bunch of armed masked guards on a gangway far above. “I wonder when this will stop being weird...”

“Maybe it never will.” said Riksu.

Daniella grinned and spun in the water so she was treading water beside Riksu and looking right at her. So small and delicate. The memory of slicing through Riksu’s elbows, knees, shoulders and bum flashed before Daniella. So fragile, so incredibly easy to dismember. Daniella could almost

feel her heart beating, a nervous tempo to it. She licked her lips.

Riksu blushed and looked ahead. “I just wanted to thank you for last night since I couldn’t in the morning. You are magnificent.”

Daniella closed her eyes and bit her lip. The image of Riksu on a large dinner plate appeared before Daniella again. She frowned and shook her head.

“I know it must be difficult hurting me like that.” said Riksu as she reached out to embrace Daniella. “But I honestly do like it. I was a masochist even before coming here. And it needs to be done. We need the bones and the hair.”

Daniella groaned. The words seemed to be coming from the lips of the Riksu laid out on the dinner plate in her mind’s eye. She forced herself to open her eyes and look at the real Riksu. “Are you sure?”

Riksu grinned and kissed Daniella on the lips. “I am yours. Heart, body and soul. I belong to you and love it when you use me. There is no shame in it if we both want it.”

Daniella grimaced. “But I want you so much and I couldn’t bare it if something happened to you, if I made something happen to you.”

Riksu kissed Daniella again then said. “We are in Valhalla. We are immortals who are doomed to eternal slaughter. If you did kill me, properly kill me, then it would be a mercy. Anything you want, whenever you want it, I want you to take it.”

Daniella sighed. “I don’t deserve you...”

Riksu chuckled. “The Queen In Waiting deserves a lot more than me.”

Daniella smirked. “Alright but I am going to make it up to you.”

Riksu giggled. “I look forward to it.”

Daniella kissed Riksu then pulled back. “Same plan as always.”

Riksu nodded and watched Daniella nervously.

Daniella pulled Riksu into a snog.

Riksu reciprocated.

Daniella and Riksu snogged for a long moment then Riksu broke off as she panted for air. “I love you...”

Daniella nodded. “I love you too...”

Daniella reached out for Riksu’s head and forced it under water.

Riksu flailed a thumbs up before Daniella.

Daniella was counting silently as she watched Riksu struggle until as last her tasty morsel of a

girlfriend was transformed into a large powerful shark.

Daniella smirked. “Maybe one day I’ll let you eat me.” Then she grabbed hold of the shark’s dorsal fin and said. “Lay on, Macduff.”

The shark carried Daniella into the underwater abattoir where Tom sprang forward to restrain Daniella as Fred and George dismembered the shark.

Tom said “So I asked after this Jake of yours and the word among the guys is that he’s a pretentious ponce who is way too touchy feely. All ‘Ooh I don’t like hurting people so if I’m gonna I gotta do it right.’ and shit. It’s disgusting really.”

Daniella glared at Tom. “Yeah, well, if you were a little more like him I and my friends would be queueing to be devastated by you.”

Tom was momentarily taken aback but he quickly reapplied his gruff persona. “Oh yeah? Devastated you say?”

Daniella nodded and looked Tom right in the eyes. “I want you to flay me, to carve the flesh from my bones and disembowel me.”

Tom pulled a face.

“And of course I’d like you to fuck me senseless first.” said Daniella as an afterthought. “I want it to hurt.”

Tom frowned and looked away.

“When you’re done flirting we’ve got a job to do.” said Fred pointedly as George quietly hyperventilated in the corner.

Daniella turned to them and waved. “Of course you’d be more than welcome to join in. I haven’t had a good spit roast in such a long time.”

Fred shut his eyes and sighed.

George whimpered. “Just get rid of her. Someone get rid of her.”

Tom muttered. “You are unbelievable.”

Then the hose was rammed down Daniella’s throat.

*

August the 29th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up naked with the equally naked Riksu lying beside her with a bowl of seedless grapes. Riksu was lying on her side, resting her head in her right hand as she placed grapes into her mouth with her left.

Daniella smirked. “Were you watching me sleep?”

Riksu placed her left hand on Daniella’s chest and smiled. “You seemed so peaceful it seemed a

shame to wake you."

Riksu leaned over Daniella and gave her a peck on the lips.

Daniella grinned. "May I have a grape?"

Riksu picked a grape up from the bowl with her left hand and slid it between Daniella's lips. "My sleeping beauty can have whatever she wants."

Daniella ate the grape thoughtfully as she admired her partner. Then the image of Riksu on a dinner plate flashed before Daniella's eyes again.

"What is it?" asked Riksu as she noted the way Daniella closed her eyes and seemed to shrink back in shock.

Daniella tried to speak but she couldn't find the words and groaned.

"Tell me. Whatever it is I'll do my best to help." said Riksu as she stroked Daniella's face.

Daniella looked deep into Riksu's eyes and said "I keep getting these images, these flashes, whenever I look at you and it freaks me the fuck out because I don't want to be that kind of person but oh God I hunger for it and I just... I just..."

Riksu looked at Daniella with deep concern and love in her eyes. She took Daniella's left hand in her own and squeezed tight. "You just – What?"

Daniella could feel Riksu's hearts beating. She was such a beautiful caring woman and so so small, with such easily removable arms and legs. And her smell? Her smell was intoxicating and invigorating. It was as if Daniella could already taste her succulent breasts...

Daniella bit her lip.

A new image appeared before Daniella now. Riksu lay on a yellow lilo floating on the surface of the water as a huge shark erupted from the water to crush down, teeth first, upon her. Except Riksu didn't scream, she giggled and cried her approval as the shark devoured her. And Daniella wasn't afraid now, she was aroused.

Riksu squeezed Daniella's hand and said. "I have pledged my life to you, Dany, you are my Queen and I am yours to do with as you wish. You can tell me anything, you know that."

Daniella held Riksu's gaze for a long moment then nodded. "I just... I just really want you to fuck me, hard. I want you to ride me like a racehorse and dominate me."

Riksu smiled. "There now, that wasn't so bad was it?"

Daniella nodded and smiled. "I just didn't want to offend or upset you. I know you like to be on the bottom."

Riksu giggled and mounted Daniella. "If my Mistress wants me to fuck her then a fucking is what she shall get."

Daniella grinned, looking up at her beloved. "But what will you fuck me with?"

Riksu held up a foot long, thick, black, silicon cock. “A present from our mutual friend, Jake.”

Daniella stared at it, her face a mix of shock, terror and elation. “How?”

Riksu chuckled. “We can talk about that later. I think we will be needing a couple of other items that were included in his package.”

“Such as?” asked Daniella.

Riksu held up a ball gag and a bell. “Ring the bell when you want me to stop or if there is any problem.”

Daniella stared up at Riksu. Surprised and aroused by this newly confident and dominant Riksu. “Oh, yes...”

Riksu secured the ball gag in Daniella’s mouth then placed the bell within arms reach before she strapping the cock on.

*

August the 29th 2019 - Some Time Later

Riksu removed Daniella’s gag and carefully extracted herself so she could lie beside her lover.

Daniella panted. “Thank- Thank you.”

Riksu panted. “Pleasure, my Queen.”

Daniella looked across at Riksu’s strap on, Daniella’s cum starkly visible against the black of the silicon. “I think we’re going to need to clean that?”

Riksu giggled and set about removing the strap on cock.

Daniella leaned over and kissed Riksu on the cheek. “I love you.”

Riksu removed the cock and held it before Daniella’s face. “Do you want to clean it?”

Daniella burst out laughing.

Riksu shrugged. “Suit yourself.”

Daniella’s laughter froze in her throat as she watched Riksu lick the cock and deep throat it.

Riksu caught Daniella staring and grinned. “There is an ancient phrase where I come from, a phrase that carries great meaning and power, do you know what it is?”

Daniella shook her head.

Riksu stared at Daniella. “Never waste the cum of a lover.”

Daniella stared at her.

Riksu giggled and stroked Daniella's face. "Come on my Queen, let us meet your subjects."

Daniella nodded and sat up so she could search for her bikini. "How did Jake get that package to us anyway?"

"Artemis delivered it." said Riksu as she went to pick up something from the floor. "And she also dropped off these..."

Daniella looked to where Riksu was holding up two impressive black jackets. "You are kidding me."

*

August the 29th 2019 - Some Time Later

Riksu and Daniella entered the mead hall dressed in three piece suits with zip up leather jackets, collars pledging their allegiances and thigh high leather boots. As they entered the mead hall they studied it.

Hai and Hotaru were commanding women sat at a long chain of tables as they processed the harvested limbs and scalps of women. Occasionally fresh body parts would be delivered by women serving as couriers.

Kirsty and Lisa were overseeing a long chain of tables filled with women. Lisa sported a crop top, a pink skirt and flip flops. Kirsty was wearing trainers, tight jeans and a thick pullover.

Artemis and Lucy stood lecturing women who were lined up between the two tables. Lucy was dressed in a waistcoat, a short sleeved shirt, formal trousers and brogue shoes. Artemis wore a short black skirt, red pointed shoes and a tight red v-neck sweater.

All except Artemis wore collars, even the otherwise naked women patiently listening to the instructions being given.

Daniella muttered. "Bloody heck."

Riksu looked to Daniella. "What do you wish to do my Queen?"

"Speak to my bloody owner." said Daniella irritably.

So Daniella and Riksu walked over to Artemis and Lucy.

Once they got close Daniella and Riksu could see that Artemis was slowly carving up a ginger woman for the watching audience.

"Next you want to ease your knife under the surface and gradually slide it up and down, working it back and forth under the skin." Artemis worked a knife beneath the skin of the ginger woman's left arm as she addressed the crowds but now she turned her attention to the ginger women in question and asked. "How does this feel, Patricia?"

The ginger woman nodded and smiled. "Good.. It's good. Yeah, good."

Artemis smiled then wedged the knife beneath the ginger woman's skin so she could ruffle her hair.

“Remember, you aren’t slaughtering cattle. These are your sisters, women who will fight and die for you. You need their bodies but you need them to enjoy it as well.”

Artemis kissed the ginger woman on the forehead then passed her along to the woman on her left to finish slaughtering.

Lucy turned from the lecture to call over to Kirsty. “Can we have another volunteer!?”

Kirsty nodded in response and strode down the table, selected a suitable woman, placed her hand on her shoulder and whispered in her ear. The woman rose from her seat on the bench and went to give herself over to Lucy.

Daniella coughed.

Lucy noticed Daniella now, she hadn’t recognised her wearing clothes. She leaned over to Artemis and whispered in her ear.

Artemis clapped her hands and grinned. “It seems your Queen joins us at last.”

Lucy stepped aside to let Daniella and Riksu enter the rectangle of women.

Daniella glared at Artemis and said icily. “Artemis, my dearly beloved Mistress, would you care to explain just what exactly is going on here?”

Artemis laughed and hugged Daniella. She said with incredible cheeriness. “I said I would help you with your revolution so this is me helping you, my sweet. I have already instructed your followers in the ways of producing leather and cloth. I have delivered off sharp knives to aid in that endeavour and given your army a uniform. Now, I impart the knowledge I showed to you last night so your armoury and resources may grow.”

Daniella chuckled and the rest of the women in the rectangle laughed.

“Won’t you get caught?” muttered Daniella.

Artemis muttered. “Not when you provide clothes to the Queen of Valhalla I won’t.”

Daniella sighed. “Stay safe...”

Artemis kissed Daniella on the forehead and said. “I can look after myself.”

A woman outside the rectangle tapped Lucy on the shoulder. Lucy let her inside the rectangle.

Artemis noticed the woman and cried “Oh, now you have glorious hair!”

The woman froze.

Artemis said. “It’s okay, girl. Who are you?”

Lucy laid a reassuring hand on the woman’s shoulder.

The woman sighed “Rachel.”

“Rachel? That’s a nice name.” said Artemis. “Now come forward, don’t be shy. I will make sure you enjoy this.”

Rachel walked forward nervously then felt Artemis embrace her.

Artemis ran her fingers through Rachel’s hair and said. “Hair as long and healthy as this is a valuable resource. Now, who can tell me how we harvest it.”

Hands shot up among the women in the rectangle. Artemis pointed to one. “You? Go.”

“You bunch it up like making a pony tail and cut it off.” said the woman Artemis had indicated to answer.

Artemis turned to Daniella. “Lets see what your Queen has to say shall we?”

Daniella smirked. “You don’t cut the hair, you cut the head. You slice the scalp clean off the head.”

“Right you are.” said Artemis. “Right you are.”

Rachel had been relatively calmed by Artemis stroking her but now she looked up at Artemis with fear in her eyes.

Artemis frowned and stroked Rachel’s face. “My Queen, what would you suggest if you were concerned that the woman you had to harvest might be a screamer?”

Daniella looked to Riksu and took her hand in hers. “Well if it were me, I would remove the tongue.”

Riksu blushed.

Rachel’s face was a picture of utter terror now. She looked desperately to Daniella.

Daniella stroked Rachel’s hair and kissed her on the forehead. “Braveheart, Rachel, she knows what she’s doing.”

Artemis bought some snippers out of a pocket and asked. “If you would open wide?”

Rachel held Daniella’s gaze as she parted her lips to let Artemis’s hand in.

Artemis passed Rachel’s tongue to Lucy then kissed Rachel on the forehead. “That wasn’t so bad was it?”

Rachel shook her head then Artemis spun her round so she was facing the audience. “Now when you’re going to remove a scalp always remember to enter your blade at the forehead so you can peel backwards out of sight of the woman being harvested to reduce the stress on them. Of course you could always remove their eyes first but we aren’t going to be doing that with Rachel...”

*

August the 29th 2019 - Some Time Later

As the night drew on the volunteers at the table Lisa and Kirsty oversaw dwindled until Artemis and Lucy’s students were commanded to harvest each other.

The final five were knighted to Queen's guard by Daniella before they were themselves harvested by Artemis, Lucy, Kirsty, Lisa, Daniella and Riksu.

"So what happens now?" asked Kirsty.

Artemis led them over to a corner of the room where a large metal tub sat with two stools and an array of containers around it.

Daniella looked to Artemis uncertainly.

"Big enough for two." said Artemis with a smile as she mad to put her hands on Riksu's shoulders. "What do you reckon?"

Riksu grinned. "I am very interested, if my Queen wills it."

Lucy wrung her hands awkwardly as she looked to Daniella.

Daniella grinned and hugged Lucy. "You are my most favourite people in this wretched world. Thank you."

Kirsty asked. "Hey, what about us?"

Artemis chucked and ran a hand through Lisa's hair. "Well, where I come from Lisa's like this are toys and I intend to make full use of this one."

Lisa giggled.

"And as for you?" said Artemis as she looked Kirsty in the eyes. "Well, who do you think is going to help me harvest Lucy? I mean look at her, all muscle and bone. I'll need help."

Kirsty smirked and looked to Lucy gleefully.

Lucy chuckled.

Daniella giggled then she walked over to Artemis and muttered "You're going to harvest Kirsty and Lisa aren't you?"

Artemis grinned. "Not before I've fucked them."

Daniella glared at her.

Artemis shrugged. "They don't belong to you and they'll want it."

Daniella hissed. "Lisa's my pet..."

Artemis looked at Daniella with a new appreciation then said with a wicked grin. "Then I will be very gentle."

Artemis hugged Daniella and kissed her on the forehead. "Remove your clothes, there's a good girl."

Daniella walked over to Lucy and started removing her clothes.

Riksu approached Artemis and said. “If you ever hurt my Queen, I will destroy you.”

Artemis snorted. “Likewise.”

Riksu smirked and started undressing.

*

Chapter 15
What You Are In The Dark

August the 30th 2019

Daniella woke up naked in darkness. For a moment she wanted to panic. Nightmarish visions of sharks tearing Riksu apart in a frenzy appeared before her.

Daniella wanted to scream, to cry out for help, but then she smelt Riksu beside her. Her sweat and blood. She could hear Riksu breathing, a steady rhythmic beat and she could feel Riksu’s heart beating. Steady, strong beats. The feeling calmed Daniella and she turned to look at Riksu.

At first there was nothing, just pitch black, then her mind filled in the blanks with other sensory information. The smell of Riksu’s hair, the sweat in her joints, the must of her anus, the sound of her breathing and the feel of her blood pumping around her body. It was like Daniella was seeing Riksu properly for the first time, not as a picturesque beauty but as a living breathing shitting person.

Daniella reached out a hand to clear the hair from Riksu’s face, leaned over and lightly kissed her on the cheek.

Riksu stirred and it was like she erupted in technicolour so sudden was the change in electrical, barometric and olfactory activity.

“Hey...” said Riksu as she rolled backwards a little so she could properly address Daniella.

Daniella stroked her face and hugged her. “I love you, you know?”

“Good...” said Riksu with a smile. “Because I love you too.”

Riksu leaned in to kiss Daniella and accidentally headbutted her on the nose. “Sorry, I’m sleepy.”

Daniella gave Riksu a peck on the lips then said. “I’ll leave you to sleep then but I’m going for a walk and I may be some time.”

Riksu nodded. “Okay.” Then almost immediately she fell back to sleep.

Daniella got to her feet, found her bikini and collar, got dressed in them then staggered out the sleeping chambers and into the meadhall.

There was noone else around, apparently even the guards were all asleep. Well there was one person.

Artemis sat on a stool drinking from a flask before the tin tub Daniella was now so familiar with. Daniella counted 5 skeletons in the tub.

Artemis called out. “Came back for seconds have you!?”

Daniella chuckled darkly. “No! No, I came here to look.”

“Look at what?” asked Artemis as she handed Daniella the flask when she was within reach.

“At this...” Daniella said as she gestured to the abandoned mead hall.

Artemis nodded and sighed. “It had to be done.”

“But why though? Why us?” asked Daniella as she took a seat on the stool opposite Artemis. “Why do I have to become so utterly monstrous? Why do I have to slaughter my followers and friends?”

Daniella took a sip from the flash and coughed at the strength before she handed it back to Artemis,

Artemis looked to Daniella. “Because you’re only one who can. These women are doomed to eternal suffering unless you arm them and teach them to fight.”

Daniella groaned. “But I want to eat my girlfriend. This isn’t normal. This isn’t natural. I can’t keep slaughtering people. I can’t keep slaughtering her. I have to get out of this fucking headspace.”

Artemis sipped her drink and grimaced as she leaned over the tub to gesture at Daniella. “You are my girl, I have sworn an oath to protect and care for you and...” Artemis frowned. “Where was I going with this?” Artemis sipped from her flask again then said. “Our lives are different from anybody else’s and this is the important thing, listen to me now because one day your life may depend upon this...”

Daniella stared at Artemis. “I’m listening.”

Artemis wagged her index finger vigorously at Daniella. “You are powerful and you are powerful for a reason. I have given you an army, I have given you the tools and understanding to make an armoury but you can’t rely on me. You can’t even trust me. I belong to the enemy, I work for them and I am not always going to be able to have your back. You have to be able to do this on your own. You have to let yourself become the monster that fights monsters because these women don’t need a lecture on the bigotry of mansplaining. They need a hero to unify them and send them at the enemy.”

“But I’m no warrior, no general and no hero.” said Daniella with a sigh. “I’m a young idiotic amateur academic.”

“That doesn’t matter.” said Artemis bluntly. “When you were freed and freed the others you became a leader of women. A hundred weresharks are at your command. You just have to know how to use them.”

Daniella laughed bitterly. “We aren’t weresharks, we aren’t monsters to fight other monsters. We’re young stupid girls who fell for bad boys.”

Artemis nodded solemnly. “That’s why there hasn’t ever been a successful revolution. But hold onto your hunger for Riksu. Don’t let it consume you but hold on tight to it and never let it go

because that hunger is your strength. That hunger is the blood of the wereshark talking."

"And what exactly is a fucking wereshark?" asked Daniella pointedly. "How the fuck are a bunch of pretty young girls supposed to take down armed guards?"

"I could show you." said Artemis after a moment.

Daniella stared at her. "You can show me?"

"You won't like it. You won't like it at all." said Artemis seriously.

"Show me." said Daniella firmly.

"You really really won't like it." said Artemis with a dread chill to her voice. "And I can't stop once I begin."

Daniella shrugged. "We're prisoners in hell. Show me."

Artemis nodded. "Remember that you asked for this."

Daniella smiled curtly. "Get on with it."

Artemis knocked back the flask with her left hand, elbowed Daniella in the nose, tossed the flask away, smacked Daniella in the back of the head and drove her forehead into the side of the tin bath tub as Artemis picked up a knife with her right hand and drove it into Daniella's exposed chest, stabbing her right in two of her hearts. Artemis rose from her stool and forced Daniella to the floor.

"I did tell you not to trust me." said Artemis dryly as she laid a knee across Daniella's neck and started stabbing her repeatedly in the chest.

Daniella reached out her hands instinctively to try and stop the knife blows. "You fucking bitch!"

Artemis stabbed Daniella in the eye. "Die, you stupid bitch."

Daniella felt so weak and so very tired as her lungs struggled to get enough oxygen to keep the blood pumping to her organs and with each unthwarted blow her ability to pump that blood grew weaker and weaker. As she felt herself die she remembered Riksu. Dear sweet, delicate Riksu.

Daniella remembered Riksu's laughter and the feeling of her body snuggling up against her own, Riksu ploughing Daniella like fertile ground after a hard winter. She remembered Riksu's heart beat and the feeling of sawing through her flesh, of holding her underwater struggling for breath. She remembered the dreams and fantasies of devouring Riksu. That hunger gave Daniella strength now and she placed her left hand firmly about Artemis's knife hand and her right about Artemis's neck.

"You told me to hold onto the hunger, well I shall not disappoint you." said Daniella as she closed her hands about Artemis and put all the strength she had into crushing Artemis with her bare hands. Except as Daniella watched her hands weren't bare any more, they were huge things covered in scales and fur topped by razor sharp claws.

"Good... Girl..." muttered Artemis through the pain.

Daniella tossed Artemis aside and she flew across the room like a ragdoll then landed awkwardly on

a table before she rollied off the edge out of site.

Daniella got to her feet and was momentarily disorientated with the subtle uncanny impression of being taller. Then she saw her reflection in the acid of the tin bath tub. Gone was the 22 year old blonde feminist and in her place was a giant with the head and mouth of a Great White Shark, the fur, nose, ears and whiskers of a wolf.

“Fuck me.” Daniella’s voice boomed like the giant from jack in the beanstalk.

“I said you wouldn’t like it if I showed you...” said Artemis as she panted.

Daniella turned. Artemis looked so very small now but there was something odd about her that Daniella was only just realising now she was full in tune with the senses of a wereshark. “You’ve got three hearts?”

Artemis nodded. “I’m a wereshark and I know every single thing you are feeling right now because I have been there, I really have. I will explain more later but you are mine, you understand? Mine! I don’t like hurting you but you asked for it and you wanted to know.”

Daniella frowned. “Do you really think I can lead this revolution?”

Artemis stared up at Daniella. “I think you are the only one who can.”

Daniella felt herself shrink before Artemis. “I could have killed you.”

“You really really couldn’t.” said Artemis bluntly. “I am far more than just another wereshark.”

Daniella asked. “Would you have killed me?”

Artemis shrugged. “They need you but they need you strong and I would kill you a thousand times to make that happen.”

Daniella frowned. “Oh...”

Artemis embraced Daniella and stroked her hair. “You are my sylph. I love you and I think you are wonderful and beautiful and adorable but you are also mine to destroy if you jeopardize the mission.”

“I have to do this, don’t I?” asked Daniella uncertainly. “I have to give into the darkness.”

Artemis nodded and kissed Daniella on the forehead. “You are not alone, Dany. I swear to you I will always be by your side once this is over.”

Daniella nestled her head against Artemis’s chest. “Will Riksu be able to join us?”

Artemis stroked Daniella’s hair lovingly and said. “Uhuh, and Lisa and Lucy and Kirsty. Oh, Kirsty is a fun girl, so much pride. It’s like crackling when it breaks, you can literally watch her fall entirely under your spell.”

Daniella smirked then paused for a moment before adding. “I think I my collar and bikini burst when I...?”

“Sharked out?” said Artemis with a smirk. “Yeah, that happens. I’ll get you replacements.”

“Thank you.” said Daniella then something occurred to her. She looked up at Artemis and asked. “What was in that flask?”

“Lighter fluid.” said Artemis with a smirk.

Daniella burst out laughing.

Artemis laughed with Daniella for a moment then she squeezed her tight and pat her on the bum. “Come on, lets get you home.”

Daniella asked. “How? I’ve got no collar.”

Artemis chuckled and pulled one from a pocket. “I bought enough for an army.”

Daniella smiled as Artemis secured the collar round her neck. “I think I love you, you know?”

“That was never in doubt.” said Artemis sweetly as she began to stroke Daniella in earnest. “Walkies...”

Daniella felt herself give into the warmth and love of Artemis and fell forward into unthinking bestial obedience.

*

Chapter 16
Sweet Like Chocolate

August the 30th 2019 - 9 hours later

Daniella woke up naked at the foot of Artemis’s bed. She got to her feet, cleaned her teeth and had a shower. As the water rolled down her skin she found herself aware of the most wondrous smell and some urge deep within her broke free causing her to howl like a wolf with pleasure.

When Daniella exited the shower, clean and dry, she made her way downstairs to the reassuring sight of Artemis in a piny cooking a fry up.

“It smells delicious.” said Daniella.

Artemis chuckled, focusing on the cooking, she called back. “There’s a dressing gown on the banister. It’s nearly ready.”

Daniella left the kitchen, found the fluffy dressing gown from the morning before, put it on and returned to find Artemis bringing a plate of sausages, hash browns, fried eggs, fried bread, tomatoes, mushrooms, bacon, black puddings and a slab of what looked like a medium rare steak.

Daniella took a deep breath and sighed with pleasure. “Magnificent.”

“It’s Riksu.” explained Artemis as Daniella took to her seat and picked up a knife and fork. “Thought you’d like it.”

Daniella froze. She looked at the tomatoes suspiciously. “It’s all Riksu...?”

“Well obviously not everything.” said Artemis with a smile. “The tomatoes, the mushrooms, the bread, the hash browns and the eggs are very safely not Riksu. Though interestingly I knew a girl who could lay egg clones of herself. I think she was quite popular at breakfast.”

Daniella stared at her. “Is this supposed to be some kind of a joke?”

“No joke.” said Artemis earnestly as she met Daniella’s gaze. “You confessed to me your desire for your girlfriend’s flesh and I happened to have a surplus of it and some recipes set aside for cooking your flesh so I thought you’d appreciate the gesture.”

Daniella said nothing as her eyes bored into Artemis’s soul.

Artemis shrugged. “If you’re annoyed that you didn’t get to harvest her yourself there is plenty of time for that. In fact I think I could gut her in such a way that her body lies lifeless atop the water for you to devour as a shark.”

Daniella said. “When I told you that it was because the idea horrified me. I wasn’t asking you to serve her up for me...”

“I know...” said Artemis exasperated. “I just thought that since she was already slaughtered and her flesh was only going to go to waste that it made sense.”

Daniella groaned. “What exactly made you so laissez faires about eating people?”

“The Contravoxai and the Bam-Kursh. Maybe I’ll tell you about it someday.” said Artemis then she sighed. “Look, you don’t have to eat it. I can easily throw some factory farmed - can’t heal - just dies - pig bacon on the hob for you.”

Daniella sighed and started cutting up the bacon, sausages and steak to try. “I’m sorry, I know you were trying to be nice.”

“No. You were right.” said Artemis with a sigh.. “It probably isn’t normal to serve the flesh of someone’s romantic partner to them.”

Daniella tried the sausage. A little sweet and spicy but very moreish. Then she tried the bacon. Like honey glazed Canadian bacon, glorious. Then she tried the steak and groaned.

“Oh god. It’s horrible isn’t it?” said Artemis bitterly. “You’re not fucked up like me so it tastes different to you.”

Daniella stared into the middle distance, chewed thoughtfully for a moment then she swallowed and declared. “I’m going to hell, I am a monster. That was without a doubt the best thing I have ever tasted. What was it?”

Artemis brought her hands up so her elbows were resting on the table and grinned. “Equivalent to a rib-eye steak.” She leaned over and patted Daniella in the back just below her shoulder blades. “About here. Usually the best bit. I mean you are going to be glorious. Particularly with a honey glaze and gravy I think.”

Daniella stared at her. “So I like the flesh of my girlfriend and you like my flesh? We are both going to hell.”

“Well I don’t know for sure. I haven’t tried you yet but I am looking forward to it.” said Artemis casually. “Ooh and I nearly forgot I made you a drink.”

Artemis left the table and removed a pot from the hob. She fetched two mugs from a cupboard and poured a thick steaming red liquid into each of them.

Daniella groaned. “Please don’t say that’s what I think it is.”

Artemis giggled. “Riksu’s blood with a bit of sugar and brandy. I used this to make the black puddings but - Well try for yourself and be careful, it’s hot.”

Daniella accepted the mug she was offered and said wryly. “Yes, it would be a tragedy if I burned myself, you might not be able to resist eating me.”

“Oh don’t be ridiculous.” said Artemis incredulously then she smirked.. “I like my steak rare. Indeed we could always experiment with me eating you alive. I have heard it’s quite the experience.”

“I bet it bloody is...” Muttered Daniella then she placed the mug to her lips and almost dropped it in shock when she took a sip.

Artemis snatched the mug away from Daniella and went to fetch a pitcher of iced water. “See I told you, it’s hot and you’ve burned yourself!”

Daniella cried out in frustration. “Why does my girlfriend taste so fucking good!?”

Artemis chuckled. She placed the pitcher on the table then fetched two long bendy straws from a cupboard and cut their ends sharp. “Your girlfriend tastes so good because she is a sylph and sylphs are designed to taste so good people have to keep them alive and on top of that you are a wereshark which means you hunger for the flesh of others.”

Artemis returned with the straws. “I have something to show you. May I tear a hole in one of the veins in your neck?”

Daniella leaned close to Artemis and said pointedly. “Jake will be expecting me...”

“Oh, I’m not going to eat you.” said Artemis dismissively. “Not now anyway. You’ll be able to finish your breakfast and see Jake.”

“Okay then...” said Daniella uncertainly. “Tear away.”

Artemis placed one straw down on the table then the one pointy end down between the index and middle finger of her right hand as she reached over to Daniella, pinched either side of Daniella’s jugular vein then tore the vein in one quick movement before she shoved the pointy end of the straw up against the flow of blood and took a good suck at the other end of the straw.

“God, I’ve missed this. You are delightful Daniella, you really are, and ever so tasty.” said Artemis.

Daniella was panting. “That was... That was...” Daniella stared at Artemis and felt herself seem to melt before the woman. “You’re fucking glorious, you know that?”

Artemis chuckled and pat Daniella on the shoulder reassuringly. “That’ll be the sylph in you issuing chemical rewards for obedience.”

Artemis took another suck of Daniella’s blood and moaned in delight. “We really are going to have to eat you someday I think.”

Daniella nodded. “Yes, please.”

Artemis leaned back and grinned like a Cheshire Cat. “Okay, now you try me.”

Daniella stared at her. “But you’re my owner and I’m not... I’ve never done this before.”

Artemis chuckled. “Honey, I’m a wereshark, I’ll be okay and you don’t have to worry about cleaning anything. I just want to show you that your girlfriend is not uniquely tasty to you.”

Daniella sighed and remembered how Artemis had put on a display last night so she could show Daniella the wereshark inside her. “Okay...”

Daniella did her best to mimic Artemis, as she placed the clear straw pointy end down between the index and middle finger of her right hand. She felt around for a vein in Artemis’s neck and checked the flow of blood, placed her thumbs and index fingers either side around the vein and tried to tear it. No good.

“It’s not as easy as it looks..” said Daniella after a few tries.

Artemis smiled and handed Daniella the steak knife.

Daniella stared at Artemis. “You’ll get infected.”

Artemis stared at Daniella and smirked.

Daniella frowned, accepted the steak knife and sliced a hole through Artemis’s vein. Blood burst forth, it spattered Daniella in the face and drenched her dressing gown before Daniella managed to ram the pointy end home and begin sucking.

Daniella froze mid suck and closed her eyes, then after a moment she resumed sucking. After about half a minute Daniella finally removed her lips from about the straw. “You were right...”

Artemis was staring off into the middle distance, a smile fixed upon her face.

Daniella stared at her, and waved her hand back and forth before Artemis.

After another a moment Artemis sighed and sadly. “It’s been so long since I was drunk...” Then Artemis seemed to return to her senses and said. “See, we’re all tasty and enjoying us is fine.”

Daniella sighed. “But I don’t like that I like this, I don’t want to be this way... It’s not normal. It’s not natural. This is degenerate and strange and so very wrong.”

“We did not choose this.” said Artemis as she reached out to stroke Daniella reassuringly. “We didn’t ask to be this way but we are and so long as we are safe, sane and consensual, where’s the harm?”

Daniella groaned and looked away.

Artemis reached over and took a sip from the straw still embedded in Daniella's neck.

Daniella shivered and let and a small moan of pleasure.

"You are a sylph." said Artemis pointedly. "And you are my Sylph. If I want to eat you, that's on me, not you. And I slaughtered Riksu and I cooked her up for you so don't let her go to waste."

Daniella mewled quietly for a moment then she sipped Riksu's blood from her mug and set about finishing her breakfast.

Artemis quietly removed the straw from her neck then watched Daniella eat with pride as she sipped her own mug of Riksu's blood.

When Daniella had cleared her plate and drained her mug she looked eagerly to Artemis's neck, then rather dejectedly at the used straw lying bloody on the table. She asked hopefully. "Any chance of seconds?"

Artemis chuckled. "I think next time you stop round Riksu will have to come to so we can stock up."

A sly smile slid across Daniella's face.

"And of course you'll have to join her for dinner, I mean it's only polite." said Artemis with a smirk.

Daniella grinned and blushed.

Artemis stood up and left the table. "Come here."

Daniella rose from her seat and left the table so she could hug Artemis.

Artemis kissed Daniella on the forehead and slid her dressing gown off her. "My Dany, I am so very lucky to have you."

Artemis took a long drag on the straw in Daniella's neck.

Daniella was lost in the high for a moment and so was reasonably surprised to find Artemis wiping a damp cloth across her face.

Artemis finished wiping the blood from Daniella's face then she guided Daniella to the living room and sat her on an office chair beside her desk as she browsed the intranet.

"What are you doing?" asked Daniella in a daze.

"Something I should have done a long time ago and enjoying a rather delightful drink." Artemis as she reached over to suck on the straw in Daniella's neck.

"But Jake..." muttered Daniella.

"Jake needs your body, not your blood and I'll see that you arrive before him okay." said Artemis

pointedly.

Daniella tried to focus on the screen of Artemis's computer since there was nothing else to do as Artemis drank her. There were pictures of plugs and wires and circuit boards and lots of different prices on screen. What was an oscilloscope?

*

Chapter 17
Loose Lips Sink Ships

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella staggered through the curtains and smacked her head against the video screen on her way past. She saw Jake removing the brain from the woman before her and giggled.

Jake noted Daniella's presence but finished reaping his current woman and sent her to the next stage of processing before he turned to address Daniella.

Daniella grinned like a loon and sway on the spot as she giggled.

Jake stared at her. "What did you take?"

Daniella looked blankly back at him.

Jake grimaced and tried again. "Pills, edibles, smoked stuff, syringes. What was it? Why are you so out of your mind?"

Daniella giggled. "Artemis drank me. Drank me dry. Sip, sip, all gone... Then I woke up here..."

Jake stared at her. "Artemis drank you?"

Daniella nodded so vigorously she fell forward.

Jake caught Daniella.

"I'm very tasty apparently." said Daniella gleefuly. "She wants to eat me alive..." Daniella giggled. "I'm rather looking forward to it. Om nom nom nom. That's how I'll go."

Jake stared at Daniella. "When I messaged Artemis it was because I thought you needed talking out of this and now she's drinking you?"

Daniella shrieked with laughter. "She... She... She cooked Riksu up and fed her to me... Oh, she was delightful. I can't wait to eat her again."

Jake patted Daniella on the back, furious at Artemis, then he remembered what his job was and rolled his eyes. "Only I could feel guilty that the women I have to slaughter enjoy it too much."

Daniella laughed right in Jake's ear.

Jake sighed and sliced through her windpipe quickly before he reached for his tongue snips.

"I found someone like you, you know?" said Daniella amid her distinctly muted giggles. "A guy

who can cut... Tom his name is, and he fucking wants me..."

"Right..." said Jake. He rolled his eyes as he reached between Daniella's lips and cut out her tongue.

*

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up floating in the water. The calm normality feeling like stark nihilistic depression compared to the giggling high being drunk had bought on. For a moment Daniella was lost in the past analysing what she'd just experienced. Had Artemis really said? "There. Now that's ordered, it won't be long before we can make you imprint on me and give you an off switch in case I ever do need that spare."

And then Daniella smelled a familiar smell and felt three hearts beating in unity beside her. A vision of launching up out of the water beneath Riksu before crashing down upon her and devouring her appeared before Daniella.

"I know you're scared." said Riksu quietly. "What's happening? How can I help?"

Daniella closed her eyes. The words "Drown me and wait here." were at the front of her mind but she bit her tongue and said. "I like you Riksu, like really like."

"Well I really like you." said Riksu as she stretched an arm over Daniella's chest.

"Not this way you don't." said Daniella with a sigh.

"Then tell me..." said Riksu.

Daniella sighed and muttered. "Fuck it."

Daniella rolled in the water so she was treading water. "Okay, but you aren't going to like it?"

Riksu rolled in the water so she could tread water opposite Daniella. "I'm not going to hurt you. Tell me. I can't stand knowing that something about me makes you so afraid."

Daniella closed her eyes for a moment as she composed herself then she cleared her throat, looked Riksu right in the eyes and said. "For some time now I've been having visions of you on my dinner plate, I have fantasized about slaughtering you and eating you, about turning into a shark so I can devour you and it freaks me the ever loving fuck out because you are so willing and Artemis fed you to me today. She turned your flesh into sausages, bacon and black puddings and I drank your blood and ate steak made from you and it was all so so good. You are utterly fucking tasty and I just want to spend eternity devouring you and slaughtering you and that is so so wrong..."

Daniella floundered and shrugged. "Do you hate me?"

Riksu stared at Daniella. "You want to eat me?"

Daniella nodded.

"And you say I'm good?" asked Riksu.

Daniella nodded. "The best."

Riksu pursed her lips and nodded. She tutted as she thought. “Perhaps it might be best if we have some time apart? I mean I know Lucy is interested and Lisa loves it when you dominate and slaughter her?”

Daniella nodded. “If that’s what you think is best?”

“I need to think about this.” said Riksu carefully. “I’m not saying it’s over, I’m just saying that this is rather a lot to take in.”

“Okay...” said Daniella.

“Can you drown me please?” asked Riksu. “I’ll take you to the next part of processing but the rest you’ll have to do on your own.”

Daniella nodded. “As you wish.”

There was an awkward moment of silence between them before Daniella reached out and forced Riksu’s head under the water.

As Riksu suffocated Daniella felt their relationship suffocate with her.

Finally Riksu transformed into a shark and Daniella rode her to the next stage of processing.

*

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Tom sprung forward and dragged Daniella away as Fred and George set about slaughtering Riksu.

Tom asked “Were you serious about wanting me?”

Daniella nodded. “Now more than ever.”

Tom grinned then pulled a knife out of his pocket and sliced a hole in Daniella’s chest.

Daniella gasped and glared at him.

“For later.” said Tom as he rammed something covered in plastic inside of her. “Just remember to act surprised like you aren’t expecting it or that’ll be my head on a platter.”

“Aren’t expecting what?” asked Daniella, confused.

“Exactly.” said Tom as he smoothed down the wound he’d made and stowed his knife. He kissed Daniella on the lips and stroked her hair.

“What was that for?” asked Daniella.

“Being utterly unbelievably gorgeous and delightful.” said Tom sweetly.

“Right...” said Daniella, unsure how to respond.

“Is something wrong?” asked Tom nervously

“Well yeah...” began Daniella.

Fred coughed pointedly.

“Sorry...” said Tom as he reached for the hose.

*

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up alone in the dark. She felt numb, like she didn’t want to live any more. Suddenly aware that she wasn’t at university any more and her whole world was slaughter for all eternity. Then she became aware of something on the edge of her perception, three hearts beating and the sound of steady breathing.

“Who is it?” asked Daniella.

“Do you wanna know something crazy?” asked Lucy. “I think that right now I understand you perhaps best out of everyone in the entire universe.”

“How so?” asked Daniella, still not opening her eyes.

“You are my Queen and I have pledged my life to you and I meant that. I am your sword and your shield and I will shield you against the dark but you freed me and I imprinted on you.” said Lucy. “And more than that I think you are cute and sweet and I want to dominate your pretty little arse.”

Daniella smiled wryly. “You slaughtered me... Did you like it?”

Lucy snorted. “There are other things I’d far rather do with you but yes, it was... Fun.”

Daniella chuckled and opened her eyes. “I still love her, you know?”

Lucy nodded. “Love stings and it doesn’t fade quickly. I know that you can’t love me. I know that all I will be is a rebound fuck.”

Daniella groaned and raked her face in frustration. “No! No, I cannot do that to you! I need you to be my second in command, to watch over my troops for me! I can’t afford to fuck you about!”

Lucy chuckled. “Oh, I have no intention of letting you fuck me, Princess.”

Daniella sat up on her elbows and stared at Lucy.

“You are aware that’s what Queen In Waiting means right?” said Lucy as she advanced upon Daniella as she wore the strap on cock, with a ball gag in her left hand and a whip in her right. “You are a princess, Dany and a very pretty and endearing princess at that. Now you can absolutely say no and I may listen but I don’t think you’re going to are you.”

Daniella cried. “Oh yes! Thank you!”

“Roll over, Princess.” said Lucy with a grin.

Daniella giggled and rolled over onto her front then wiggled her bum enthusiastically.

Lucy docked inside Daniella, pulled the ball gag between Daniella's lips, grabbed hold of her breasts and started thrusting rhythmically in response to her moans.

Daniella felt wave after wave of euphoria hit as Lucy stimulated her clitoris over and over and over... Energy built up inside her as Sylph endorphins echoed and amplified the sensations to reward her for being used and the blood of the wereshark surged enthusiastically at the fulfilment of the primary objective. Her moans grew louder and louder as the primal urges took over

As Lucy pounded away at Daniella she grunted with the exertion. There was no primary objective to reward and stimulate Lucy here. There was just raw sexual domination of a beauty Lucy had felt an intense sexual attraction to and increasing frustration about. Lucy had grown up in a working class community where no body cared about degrees and you had to fight to stay alive. By the law of the playground Lucy should have been Queen but no, the young pretty dimwit was in charge. And now Lucy was at last bending the Princess to her will and it felt good. So very good. Something deep inside her approved greatly at this turn of events.

Daniella was almost consumed by passion now. Her moans grew louder with each successive beat. She wasn't thinking anymore. Just feeling the blood of Lucy's hearts.

Lucy was becoming consumed by the moment, the rage of every single slight any one had ever given her adding to her furious fucking. She could almost hear laughing from another plane of existence.

Daniella howled like a wolf despite the gag as climax neared. She wasn't a person anymore, wasn't even an animal. She was a part of Lucy now. Her body reacting in flawless synchronicity with Lucy's movements. Just mindless autonomous pleasure.

Lucy howled with furious pleasure as she felt Daniella's will give way entirely to hers. She smiled a wide toothy grin, her tongue hanging free as she pounded away. A little drop of saliva slid down Lucy's tongue and dropped into Daniella's back, the sensation rippling through Daniella to Lucy. Lucy was concentrating so hard on her task that the energy and sensation seemed to enhance her perceptual awareness. It was as if she could feel a butterfly beating its wings miles away, jack boots stomping nearby and music leaking in from another dimension. She suddenly felt very very hungry and Daniella smelt so very good...

Daniella could feel the moment draw so near now as Lucy pounded her again and again. She felt like she was on the crust of a huge wave about to crash down. She started howling enthusiastically despite the gag. Come on... Come on... Come on... Yes...

Lucy roared as hunger overwhelmed her. She closed her eyes and -

PHATOOM!!!

The bullet exited via Lucy's left nipple shattering her ribcage and liquefying one of her hearts in the process.

PHATOOM!!"

Lucy's left shoulder exploded causing her left arm to fall lifeless to the ground after one last muscle twitch caused the left hand to squeeze Daniella's left breast and so tear it off with the force of the impact.

PHATOOM!!!

Lucy's right elbow exploded, shattering the bones in her right arm and causing pieces of bones to shower, cut and embed themselves in Daniella's flesh

PHATOOM!!!

The bullet exited between Lucy's eyes, liquefying her brain and splattering Daniella with it.

PHATOOM!!!

Lucy's left calf muscle was liquefied and bones in her lower left leg shattered in twain.

As Lucy exploded something deep within her yet distant from the pain cried out in rage. Then her corpse fell lifeless to the floor save for two beating hearts.

Tom lowered the rifle and pulled Daniella to her feet.

Daniella screamed. "You fucking cunt! You utter fucking cunt!!!"

Tom pressed the barrel of the gun against Daniella's chest meaningfully and glared at her.

Daniella fell silent.

A familiar older male voice said calmly but with great authority. "We had a deal!"

Daniella looked to see the old man who had called off the guards from shooting her during her first day in the facility. Then she saw the half a dozen masked gunmen surrounding him. She swallowed.

The old man smiled. "I'm glad you recognise the shit have landed yourself in. In case you have forgotten I am Frank Corman and I run this facility in the name of your Lord and Master Geoff. That means you fucking obey me because if you don't I have to punish you and I don't like hurting people."

Daniella sneered. "You shot her dead as she fucked me!?"

The old man sighed and looked to Tom.

Tom bent down and placed his palm against what remained of Lucy's torso. "The hearts still beat, she'll live." As Tom rose he levelled the rifle at Daniella. "And incidentally I shot your girlfriend, not Frank."

Daniella grabbed the barrel of the gun and hissed. "He's your fucking boss, idiot."

The old man coughed. "I don't think Tom's the idiot here."

Daniella saw that six assault rifles by six different guards were pointed right at her.

"Currently you are worth more to me alive as a symbol of how I can and will crush attempts to question my system but if you actually hurt or even kill one of my employees then you have to die and I do mean die." said the old man.

Daniella stared at the old man as she still held onto the barrel of Tom's gun.

The old man chuckled with apparent good humour and patted the nearest guard on the shoulder. "Oh I have no doubt you could still murder each and every one of us before we finally put you down but the moment I die everyone you care about in this place does as well. And please don't be so naive as to think the great Geoff won't just restart the project once this island has been purged of danger."

Daniella started analysing the room for any hope of an advantage.

The old man looked to Daniella with the concern of a grandfather to a wayward relative. "You made a choice once to spare my men when you could have killed them and now I hear you are some kind of Queen to Geoff's lambs? Well for their sake I hope you make the same choice again because whatever you're planning I can guarantee you all it will result in is the deaths of the very people you claim to want to rescue."

Daniella said bitterly. "Some might say death would be a rescue from this."

The old man snorted. "Do you really believe that? And even if you do, who is to save the girls who come after?"

Daniella grimaced. "Sometimes the only choices you have are bad ones..."

The old man nodded. "And it is up to those empowered to make such choices to make the ones which provide the most pragmatic good. If you come with me now and willingly accept the sentence I have to pass then we can talk about how best to achieve such pragmatic good."

Daniella stared at him. "Why should I trust you?"

"Because in the time that we have been talking I could have killed seven different times." said the old man curtly. "I don't want bloodshed."

Daniella sighed and let go of the gun. "Guess I'm just as stupid as the day I arrived in this place."

Tom breathed a sigh of relief.

The old man shook his head. "Do you know why there is a Queen of Valhalla?"

Daniella shrugged. "She's a stubborn bitch."

"No." said the old man with a smile. "We let her have power because we understand that it is in everyone's interests to have the popular leaders on our side. If you work with me I will do what I can to see that your people have their interests seen to. Lets work together to make each other's lives easier."

Daniella sighed. "Okay... Okay, I'll trust you."

"Good." said the old man. "Then you'll accept your punishment with good grace. Walk with Tom, won't you?"

Daniella looked to Tom, as if properly noticing him for the first time.

Tom winked at her.

Daniella frowned then gave a nod.

“Turn around.” said Tom calmly.

Daniella turned on the spot.

Tom placed the rifle in his left hand so he could fire it from the hip if he needed to, placing the barrel against the small of Daniella’s back then he grabbed Daniella by the right arm. “Follow my boss won’t you?”

Daniella slowly walked round in a circle with Tom to face the old man. She smiled curtly.

The old man nodded with satisfaction then turned and started walking out of the room.

Daniella and Tom following.

The guards kept up positions around the trio.

As they entered the mead hall Daniella recognised Kirsty’s headless corpse among half a dozen bodies.

“You wouldn’t happen to know anything about the rather unexpected level of clothing some of these people had would you?” asked the old man with a chuckle.

“No, sir.” said Daniella.

The old man and the guards led them through the mead hall, rendering headless anyone who happened to cross before them.

With a rather sickening sensation Daniella started to realise where they were headed. A feeling that was confirmed when she saw that there was an empty place above the fire where cow and pig carcasses were rotating on spits and that there was a large metal spike resting against the stanchions of the spit roaster.

Daniella asked “Are you really going to do this? Are you really actually going to do this?”

“Yes, I am Daniella.” said the old man coldly. “You threatened everything I have built here, you must be seen to pay the price.”

Daniella saw that armed guards were leaping from balconies and pouring out of secret doors in preparation to defend their employer.

When they came at last to the spit roaster the old man stopped and atleast 30 armed guards formed a protective barrier around the three of them.

“You will wait here until I pass sentence and then you will cooperate with Tom as he carries it out upon you.” said the old man.

Tom drove Daniella before the spitroaster.

The old man removed something from his pocket and hidden projectors and speakers blared into life as videos of Geoff screamed. “You will be silent! You are my lambs and you will obey me! I call upon you now to listen to my second in command Frank!”

There was a pause and a deathly lull before footage from a video camera mounted in a guard’s helmet was streamed before the entirety of Valhalla.

The old man looked into the camera and said. “I am the man that runs this facility for Geoff. I keep the rum flowing in Valhalla for you. I keep the meat and cake arriving to your tables, I see that you have light and warmth and somewhere to sleep. I protect you from the destruction of the world that is happening outside. I am not your Lord and Master, I am your caretaker and I care an awful lot about you but apparently that isn’t good enough for some of you...”

The old man let his words sink in for a moment before he continued. “I have been hearing rumours of discontent and disloyalty among the people I work so very hard to protect. It seems there are those among you who would wish violence upon me and the good lord Geoff. Fortunately I am very fucking good at my job so I have caught the leader of this would be band of terrorists...”

The image switched to display footage from helmet of a guard looking right at Daniella.

“Daniella Hopkins. The supposed Queen In Waiting who has been slaughtering her own friends and loved ones so she might harvest their bodies for resources with which to cause great and terrible harm. And if that wasn’t bad enough I hear from trusted sources that some among you now even refer to her as The Queen Of The Free. Well to those who would view this pathetic child as some fearsome warrior I call upon you now to watch her fate and decide for yourselves whether that is one you wish to share...”

Tom passed his gun off to a guard and picked up the spit standing idle.

Daniella could see Tom hefting the large metal spike in his hands behind her courtesy of a nearby projection of the video feed. “Shit.”

Tom strode round to her side and said. “Make this easy for me and I’ll do my best to make it easy for you.”

Daniella glared at Tom.

Tom glared back at Daniella then shifted the weight of the spit wholly to his left arm and reached out to her lips with his right hand.

Daniella sighed and opened her mouth wide.

Tom manoeuvred the sharpened tip of the spit to inside Daniella’s mouth then shoved it down her throat and a few inches inside her torso.

A couple of guards had passed off their guns so they could rush forward to hold the shaft aloft and Daniella upright. Tom pulled a knife from a hidden sheaf beneath his shirt and slashed Daniella’s chest open beneath the belly button so he could overlap the palms of Daniella’s hands then shove them inside the hole that he’d just made. Then Tom reached up to start driving the shaft down through Daniella’s torso in such a way as it bypassed her hearts. With a satisfying crunch he impaled Daniella’s hands with the shaft and guided it carefully out her arsehole.

“Perfect...” muttered Tom with pride as he observed the clean exit then kept driving the shaft ever downwards.

Looking at Daniella’s splayed feet, Tom asked “Could you please place one foot on top of the other?”

Daniella groaned wordlessly but obliged. This allowed Tom to drive the shaft neatly through the soles of both her feet.

More guards rushed forward to take the weight as Daniella was lifted into the air and turned to the horizontal as the shaft was driven yet further through her.

Tom took a ball of butcher’s twine and tied Daniella’s arms and legs tight about the spit. Finally the spit was locked into place above the fire and the mechanism started turning.

As footage being streamed switched to show Daniella slowly being spit roasted while still alive from the helmet of a suitably positioned guard, the old man’s voice chimed in. “To the followers of the Queen Of Valhalla and others who are loyal to me and Geoff I offer you a rare treat. Fresh roast sylph. Carve off as much flesh as you wish but she must keep her ears, eyes, brain and hearts so she is aware of every moment of her sentence. Enjoy this opportunity while you can. She will be here every day for a month.”

A voice cried out. “Dany is the one true Queen Of Valhalla and the Queen Of The Free and she gives her flesh willingly to us now as sacrifice for our suffering! All praise Dany, Queen Of The Free!”

The video switched to display the stream from the helmet cam of a guard looking at the woman who had cried out.

The old man cried. “Who challenges my verdict!?”

“Lisa Barbarella Watkins!” cried the woman. “Dany is the one true Queen Of The Free!”

“Put her on a spit.” said the old man.

Masked guards advanced to get to Lisa but they encountered resistance from women who refused to let them pass, not that it slowed them down much as the guards just shot anyone who opposed them in the head until they had Lisa surrounded and dragged her before Tom.

Lisa glared at Tom.

Tom winked at her and smiled.

Lisa was confused for a moment.

Tom reached out to stroke Lisa’s hair.

Lisa let him then found herself relaxing. “What the fuck is going on?”

Tom kissed Lisa on the forehead then said. “Trust me and it’ll go quick.”

Lisa frowned but let Tom work without resisting.

Footage of Lisa being put on the spit was streamed from a guard's helmet cam.

"Do we have any other heroes? I'm sure Geoff's little lambs would appreciate there being more sylph to go around." asked the old man as Lisa and Daniella were rotated on their spits.

A deathly silence met the old man's question.

"Good..." said the old man. "Tom, you will oversee the traitors as they pass out their sentence and ensure that any other traitors are added to the spit, for the same length of sentence of course."

Tom saluted. "Aye, Sir!"

The old man nodded. "Very good. Business over, you may go about your lives as usual."

The old man and the majority of the guards walked off.

A deathly silence hung over Valhalla for a few minutes as they took in the news before slowly the drinking, feasting, fighting, flirting and joking returned.

Tom stood beside the stanchion of the spitroaster, rifle carried between both hands and aimed at the ground. He watched the milling crowds of naked women with calm disinterest. Expert eyes watching for signs of danger.

Daniella screamed silently as she spun about the spit. With every passing moment her body fused her tighter about the rod, healing as far as possible about the metal shaft running though her. She closed her eyes to try and shut out the nausea of the spinning. A sensation not helped by her mind deciding to drag up the lyrics to an ancient song and sing them mentally on a loop as she spun.

Daniella tried to focus on her other senses. There was a scorching heat surrounding her of course, the smell of her own slowly cooking flesh and the steady squeaking of the gears that kept the spit spinning. She chastised herself for focusing on herself and forced herself to search further out. More squeaking of gears, more cooking flesh but this was... Daniella drooled and the saliva cooled her lips momentarily before steaming away. Whatever was cooking smelled good. Then Daniella heard the muted breaths and felt three hearts desperately beating away to try and keep pace with the damage being done. Oh... Even turned into a human kebab Daniella was reminded of the monster she was becoming.

Then Daniella smelt a familiar welcoming smell, a peculiar mix of pheromones and perfume. She heard steady clip clip of flat soled shoes approaching through the mead hall. For a moment Daniella felt an incredible sense of relief and hope. It was Artemis, it had to be, she was coming to take Daniella home with her.

Artemis stared at Daniella and Lisa as they rotated above the fire. "I came as quickly as I could. What happened?"

Tom gave a half shrug. "The boss ordered them put on spits so I put them on spits."

Artemis smiled and fetched a plate. "Been ages since I've had some good roast Sylph. Didn't put up much of a struggle did they?"

“No.” said Tom. “They were very cooperative.”

“So they’re undamaged then, good.” said Artemis then she reached out for Daniella’s face and stroked her cheek fondly.

Tom looked at Artemis curiously. “Do you know her?”

Artemis snorted then fetched up a knife. “Know her? I own her. The bitch comes to my heel, bit of an idiot as you can see but she is just the sweetest and I have been looking to get her on a spit myself for quite some time.”

Artemis sliced off Daniella’s left breast then carved a few slices from her forearms and calves.

Tom stared at Artemis. “So you and her are - What? Lovers? And you’re going to eat her?”

“Oh we’re not lovers.” said Artemis. “She’s just my pet and I’ve already slaughtered her a couple of times but there’s nothing quite like freshly spit roasted sylph is there?”

“I wouldn’t know.” said Tom curtly.

“You mean you haven’t tried her?” said Artemis incredulously. “Not even a nibble?”

Tom glared at Artemis. “I have a rule about not eating things that are capable of insulting me.”

Artemis chuckled as she plopped Daniella’s left nipple into her mouth. She chewed thoughtfully, swallowed then said. “Maybe when the day is done you could ask Daniella nicely if she’d let you remove her brain and put her back on spit? She can’t insult you if she’s a brainless corpse.”

Tom grimaced. “As you say, Maam.”

Artemis nodded. “I really would recommend it.” Then she looked back to the spit and squealed excitedly. “You’ve got Lisa? Nobody told me you had Lisa on the spit.”

Tom rolled his eyes. “That’d be because she wasn’t supposed to be on there but the stupid bitch decided to run her mouth off while the boss was looking.”

“Well I’m fucking glad she did because you have not lived until you’ve tried spit roasted Lisa.” said Artemis. She climbed up the ladder built into one of the stanchions beside the spit roaster then walked across a metal walkway and started carving off bits of Lisa’s arms, legs, breasts and arse.

“Well in that case I’m glad I became dead inside long ago.” said Tom wryly. “Do you actually think the lady will want to continue being your pet after you’ve so gleefully arrived to take advantage of her punishment?”

Artemis chuckled. “Oh, my friend, you have a lot to learn about sylphs. They respect dominance and they like to be dominated. As a matter of fact I’ve been planning a banquet for her and some of her closest friends for quite some time. There’s nothing quite like watching a sylph’s arousal as they’re devoured piece by tiny piece. If anything I should imagine my baby girl will love me even more after this.”

“As you say, Maam.” said Tom with a sigh.

Artemis backed down the stanchion, plate piled high with slices of meat. “Oh and one more thing?”

“Yes, Maam?” asked Tom.

“You should really scalp them before you put them on the spits.” said Artemis. “Nobody wants to eat the hair and it could get tangled in the mechanism of the spit.”

Tom nodded. “As you say, Maam.”

Artemis smiled then she leaned close and whispered in his ear. “And if I hear from anyone that you have been touching the girls inappropriately or otherwise taking advantage of them then I will be having your cock and balls for a little light desert. Is that clear?”

Tom swallowed. “And if they consent?”

Artemis chuckled, put the knife back on its rack then grabbed Tom’s crotch. “They are sylphs you stupid fuck and you just put them on goddamned spits. They would obey you if you asked them to murder their own children.”

Tom stiffened and glared at Artemis. “And what if they give me the same incentives as you?”

Artemis squeezed Tom’s cock painfully. “You really aren’t very bright are you?”

“No, Maam.” said Tom. His voice an octave higher.

“Then you better fucking pray that they care about protecting your manhood a damned sight more than you do.” said Artemis acidly.

Artemis looked back to the women being spit roasted and said. “Dany, I’ve left your things with Lucy and I’ve seen that she’ll handle things while you are otherwise busy. Tell Tom if there is anything you want me to fetch you. I’ll back back tomorrow for lunch and we will have a nice long talk when all this is over.”

Once Artemis left women started queueing up for a piece of Daniella and Lisa.

Chapter 18
Bored To Death

Daniella started to cry as she was carved up. There was Artemis, there was her mistress, taking full advantage of Daniella’s misfortune. And now she was whittled away piece by tiny piece.

“There is a legend...” came a voice Daniella’s ears suddenly. “A legend told by the free sylphs among the multiverse.”

Daniella heard sounds like gunfire, explosions and screaming in the distance above the usual chatter of the mead hall.

“They speak of a man who comes to them when they are at their lowest...” continued the voice.

Daniella could feel different heartbeats now, not just the three hearts of a weresylph but more single heart beats.

“Once at their very lowest ebbs when the sky seems to be falling in, when their friends have abandoned them and their family have turned on them, when all they face is death and suffering there he’ll be...” continued the voice.

Daniella could smell smoke, burning blood and melting metal.

“He never raises his voice, never lays a hand on them, he just stands there offering his hand in a strange suit with the piercing eyes of the multiverse...” continued the voice.

Daniella felt the discomfort of the shaft fade away and the feeling of grass beneath her bare feet.

“They call him the Butcher or the Shepard. He watches out for his flock and he guides them gladly into their next lives. He is their champion.” continued the voice.

Daniella realised she was standing on on a battlefield as men and women waged war with vast mechanical monstrosities.

“His name is the Farsh-nuke and he wants to meet you.” continued the voice.

Daniella turned and saw a tall slim woman in jack boots, jeans, a tshirt and leather jacket with her long blonde hair tied back in a ponytail.

“They call me the Paragon of Virtue but I think you know me by a different name.” said the holder of the voice.

Daniella nodded. “Lucy?”

The Paragon nodded. “At your service.”

Daniella realised there was a draft, looked down and blushed. “I’m naked.”

“Not your fault.” said the Paragon as she placed a reassuring hand on Daniella’s shoulder. “Come on, lets get you to the big guy.”

The Paragon led Daniella through the battlefield to a tent where an old man in a worn suit with faded colours sat before a strange chess board.

The old man idly asked aloud. “Surrounded on all sides, with no hope of victory, what would you do?”

“Feign compliance and usefulness until in a position to undermine and hopefully destroy them from the inside.” said Daniella.

The old man beamed and looked up at Daniella and the Paragon. “That’s genius. Wish I’d thought of that.”

Daniella took a seat on the chair then asked. “Where’s Lucy gonna sit?”

The Paragon and the old man shared a look then the Paragon coughed. “I... Umm... Have to... Oversee the battle.”

The Paragon left the tent and zipped it up after her.

“So, you’re the Farsh-nuke?” asked Daniella.

“Yes and no.” said the old man. “I am known as the Great Farsh-nuke and all this is sort of my fault, sorry.”

Daniella stared at him. “But you’re not responsible for any of what I’ve been through. It was Matt and Lena that kidnapped me. Jake, Fred and George that slaughtered me. Tom, that drowned me and put me on the spit. And it’s Frank and Geoff that paid all of them. You are entirely innocent.”

The Great Farsh-nuke chuckled bitterly. “My dear girl, I am many things but I am not innocent.”

“Then how is any of this your fault?” asked Daniella.

The Great Farsh-nuke regarded Daniella for a long moment before he explained. “Every decision creates ripples, changes in the fabric of the multiverse. Long ago I made a set of stupid decisions without thinking about the consequences and I have spent a very long time trying to make up for those mistakes. Thanks to my ill-thought out mercy I condemned a woman to have her soul bound with mine and perpetually reincarnated with me. Thanks to my rage and blood lust the power of the elder gods waned such that we were able to be tried and executed, allowing monsters who wanted to destroy the multiverse to evolve in our ab sense.”

The Great Farsh-nuke took a moment to pause for breath before he finished his explanation. “I tried to make up for this mess by creating the Logicios and in so doing created a patriarchal bunch of militaristic selfish slavers who regularly raped and devoured women. Eventually to fix that I orchestrated grievous genocide and torture to create a successor who could reform the Logicios and wipe out the monsters who would destroy the multiverse. That worked, although not without great sacrifice, and now you are suffering because of greedy old men who decided to take advantage of old war assets I failed to ensure could not fall into the wrong hands.”

The Great Farsh-nuke sighed and shrugged. “It’s all my fault. It is always all my fault.”

“No.” said Daniella after a moment. “This isn’t on you.”

The Great Farsh-nuke smiled sadly as he looked at Daniella. “That is very sweet of you to say but I don’t need you to make me feel better.”

Daniella sighed.

An awkward moment passed between the two of them for a long moment then Daniella asked. “Where is this place anyway?”

“This is where Farsh-nukes come when they die.” said the Great Farsh-nuke sadly. “Or it is now at any rate.”

Daniella thought for a long moment then stared at the Great Farsh-nuke. “But I’m not a Farsh-nuke? Or a Lucy for that matter...”

“No.” said the Great Farsh-nuke. “No, you really aren’t, but your Lucy most certainly is and she was shot dead as she fucked you and experienced her awakening. Which means we noticed how important you were to her.”

“So Lucy cares about me? So fucking what? That doesn’t mean I get to enter your afterlife or there’d be way more people here.” said Daniella pointedly.

The Great Farsh-nuke nodded. “Except you were slaughtered in the same tub as Lucy while you were both still alive. Your blood mixed.”

“So?” said Daniella. “It’s just blood, it’s not like our souls became irreparably bound.”

The Great Farsh-nuke glared at Daniella. “Not just any blood. Wereshark blood. The blood of a species born from magic that absolutely refuses to die. Your blood mixed with her and her blood mixed with you. As far as the logic of the multiverse is concerned you are the same person.”

Daniella burst out laughing.

The Great Farsh-nuke didn’t laugh.

Daniella finished laughing then stared at him. “Wait, are you serious?”

The Great Farsh-nuke nodded. “It’s a bit of a cheat I’ll grant you but I’ve always had a thing for pretty submissive blondes and nobody deserves the tedium of the spit.”

Daniella frowned. “I’m not submissive.”

The Great Farsh-nuke stared at Daniella.

Daniella frowned then said. “My girlfriend dumped me because I want to eat her. How is that submissive?”

“Diet and sexual predilections are two very different things.” said the Great Farsh-nuke wryly. “But I didn’t bring you here to seduce you, even if I must confess more than a little pleasure at your current attire.”

Daniella glared at him.

The Great Farsh-nuke smirked then asked. “Do you have any questions?”

Daniella nodded then asked. “If this is where Farsh-nukes come when they die does that mean I and Lucy are dead?”

The Great Farsh-nuke shrugged. “More or less. Weresharks are complicated. Every time the brain is removed, that is a death, yet the wereshark can keep living and remembers everything. You die and you live.”

“But am I dead, right now?” asked Daniella.

“I should imagine you soon will be.” said the Great Farsh-nuke. “Seems you are proving quite the popular delicacy.”

“But how can I be in the afterlife if I’m not yet dead?” asked Daniella.

“Because there is no such thing as the afterlife.” explained the Great Farsh-nuke. “This is a separate plane of reality some very smart people created to prevent monstrous beings that exist as pure logic

called the septagonoids destroying actual reality. People's souls, the fundamental logic of who they are is bought here when they die, or at other times, and they can never leave. We are currently abusing the system to save the real, actual, you the tedium of the spit since your brain will continue experiencing everything your soul does."

"Then what happens when my brain dies?" asked Daniella.

The Great Farsh-nuke grimaced then he bought a collar and a bikini from his pocket. "We will take very good care of you, Dany. Very good care of all of you."

Daniella frowned. "I don't think I understand what you're saying. If my soul stays here... To be with you... Then what happens to the real me? Do I then just not have a soul?"

"The brainless don't have souls." said the Great Farsh-nuke sadly. "The multiverse will create a new soul for your body when it grows a new brain and when she arrives we will use her as a conduit to talk to the real Dany and save the real Dany from the tedium and torture of the spit once more."

"And when the real me has her brain removed once more?" asked Daniella.

The Great Farsh-nuke frowned and reached out to stroke Daniella's cheek.

Daniella grabbed his hand, placed it against her cheek and looked deep into the Great Farsh-nuke's emerald green eyes. "What happens?"

The Great Farsh-nuke said sadly. "Then you'll have a sister and there'll be another Dany in my own personal afterlife."

Daniella was close to tears now. "Am I ever going to see Riksu or my family ever again?"

"The real Dany might, indeed I hope with my help that she definitely will, but your souls will stay here and they will have to find a new family." said the Great Farsh-nuke. "I am so very sorry."

Daniella burst out in tears. The Great Farsh-nuke left his chair and pulled her into a hug. "I'll take good care of your souls, Dany. Find Lucy, find her and let her know that she is safe as indeed she's already here. Your revolution will need a good general behind it and I can think of no greater than Lucy Danse. Tell her to start drilling the recruits in combat, let them make progress training to be soldiers while we teach you how to be a leader."

Daniella stared at the Great Farsh-nuke through her tears. "And what happens to me? When she's off leading the fucking glorious revolution, what happens to me?"

"Turn around." said the Great Farsh-nuke.

There was something so calm, cheerful and commanding about the tone of that instruction that Daniella did as she was told.

Lucy was standing before Daniella with a whip in one hand and a cock strapped between her legs. "Look, I know this is a lot to take in but there are no reapers here. We're free. You and I are free."

Daniella smiled through the tears.

Lucy approached Daniella and dried Daniella's eyes with her hands before she ran a hand through Daniella's hair and pulled her close. "You'll be okay. You will all be okay. There's more than enough Lucys here for every soul that stays behind. You will be fine Daniella. Now find the real me and pass on this message."

Lucy kissed Daniella gently on the lips then turned the kiss into a snog when Daniella reciprocated.

Daniella felt herself bend to Lucy's will as she was lost in the passion of the moment.

*

Chapter 19
Meet The Meat

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up to darkness. There so no smell of smoke or burning so that was a relief. There was however the feel of a trinary vascular system beating away beside her and the sound of light steady breathing. Daniella reached out a hand and found a flat surface maybe two feet ahead of her. She rapped her knuckles against it.

Tom's voice cried out. "One moment!"

There was the sound of a metal scraping against metal then a click and the surface was lifted up in an arc to reveal Tom standing over her.

Daniella glared at him. "You owe me an explanation."

"That I do." said Tom with a nod then he reached out a hand.

Daniella ignored the hand and looked at her guest.

Lisa was sleeping peacefully beside Daniella.

Daniella stroked Lisa's hair lightly and kissed her on the forehead.

Lisa stirred and smiled at Daniella. "My Queen?"

Daniella smiled and stroked Lisa's hair once more. "Get some sleep, I'll be back in a moment."

Lisa nodded and closed her eyes as she drifted back to sleep.

Daniella took Tom's hand and got up out of the storage chest.

Tom lowered the lid of the chest back down. "So..."

"So I flirt with you and ask if you know how to use a knife and you have me reported as a revolutionary, skewer me with a spit and roast me." said Daniella. "Why?"

"Because I like you." said Tom with a shrug.

Daniella glared at him. "Well you've got a funny way of showing it."

“You’ve got a reputation.” said Tom pointedly. “When I asked about Jake I found out all about the Queen In Waiting who rescued a hundred souls and plots revolution.”

Daniella swallowed.

Tom smiled sadly. “I first met you because Frank noticed you. He was going to figure it out sooner or later.”

There was a look of dread on Daniella’s face now.

Tom took Daniella’s hands in his. “I know how he works, I know what he does. He needs stopping and I think you can stop him. You have a hundred loyal soldiers and thanks to me every woman in Valhalla knows that you are the leader of the revolution while Frank now has reason to think you are loyal to him. So he’ll let you train and arm your army.”

“And?” asked Daniella as she looked first from Tom’s hands then into Tom’s eyes.

“And it means I get to spend a lot of time alone with you without being under suspicion because in what kind of fucked up world would anyone fall for the person who shoved a metal bar through their chest so they could be cooked and eaten alive?” said Tom with a smirk.

Daniella blushed and looked away awkwardly as she bit her lip.

“You know your owner threatened to eat my cock if anything happened between us.” said Tom curiously.

Daniella snorted and looked back to Tom. “Well she’ll have to get my lips off them first.”

Tom stared at her. “I-”

Daniella forced a kiss on Tom’s lips then said. “I know what you meant but I am preparing to lead an army in revolution so I can sure as shit protect you from my own owner.”

Tom smiled then slid his hand up Daniella’s naked body. “If you’re sure.”

“Is it safe to... Here?” asked Daniella uncertainly..

Tom nodded. “The kitchen staff have left for the day.”

Daniella froze. “This is a kitchen?”

“Well yes...” said Tom with a shrug.. “I mean you and Lisa are on the menu for next month.”

Daniella grinned. “So you can butcher me here?”

Tom grimaced and hurriedly shoved his hands in his pockets. “I think that has to be among my top 10 sudden turn offs.”

Daniella chuckled. “I’m not saying I want you to butcher me while we have sex. Besides I have stuff to do once we are done but I am trying to lead an army remember and that means we need supplies. Supplies my body has. Skin for leather, hair for bindings and fabric, bones for tools and

weapons and if you could drown me there's shark teeth for arrows and cutting implements."

Tom groaned. "Fine, fine. I'll... I'll butcher you. Just don't bring up bloodshed during sex please."

Daniella smirked and pulled Tom close. "Okay, I can work with that but for the record I do like that you can butcher me."

Tom sighed. "I thought your... I thought she was being a psycho when she said that you liked that stuff."

Daniella kissed Tom on the lips and said. "Oh she is a psycho but the spit isn't terrible because it hurts. It's terrible because it's boring and uncomfortable." Daniella grabbed Tom's right hand and planted it firmly on her left butt cheek. "You really should try me some day and if you like it we can always go for dinner with my owner?"

"Yes, and she can have my balls for dessert." said Tom bitterly.

"Well, only if she asks nicely and we make sure to turn you into a wereshark sylph first." said Daniella with grin.

Tom snorted. "I thought we were just a casual thing, I didn't think you were offering to spend eternity with me?"

"Oh, I'm not." said Daniella with a shrug. "But I do like the taste of cock and I'm certain there'd be others who might spend eternity with you. Me? I'm happy with the moment."

Daniella ground herself up against Tom with a smile. "Is that okay?"

Tom grinned. "I think I can work with the moment, yeah."

Tom kissed Daniella on the lips.

Daniella reciprocated and they started snogging as she reached her hands down to Tom's crotch and started unbuttoning and unzipping his trousers.

Tom fished in his trouser pocket with his left hand and removed a blue sachet as he slid his right up Daniella's body.

Daniella exposed Tom's cock at last and start massaging the area with right hand as her left started unbuttoning Tom's shirt.

Tom broke off the snog and started kissing and sucking at Daniella's neck as he guided Daniella backwards towards a counter.

Daniella moaned and tore the sachet open to extract the rolled up rubber within.

Tom ventured his lips down Daniella's chest as he backed her against the kitchen counter and lifted her onto it.

Daniella reached her left hand down and massaged Tom's semi-erect penis.

Tom sucked at Daniella's left breast playfully then froze when he found himself tasting sweet milk.

Daniella cried with elation. “Oh yes!”

Tom withdrew his lips from about Daniella’s breast, smiled and felt his hands slowly up her back.

Daniella shivered with delight and started kissing at his neck as her left handmassaged his cock.

Tom groaned and felt his hands up to Daniella’s neck.

Daniella felt his fingers close about her neck and muttered “Choke me, Master.” as she unfurled the rubber down the shaft of his cock.

Tom grinned as his fingers tightened about Daniella’s slender neck. “You little slut.”

Daniella felt her hands down Tom’s pale hairy chest and grinned. “Oh, I am bad girl.”

Tom entered Daniella with a grunt.

Daniella folded her legs about Tom and grabbed hold of Tom’s elbows. “Harder.”

Tom thrust again as his fingers tightened harder about Daniella’s neck.

Daniella moaned. “Oh yes..”

Tom thrust as he choked, grunting with the effort, an unbidden sadistic smile on his face as he dominated her.

Daniella moaned with each thrust, letting herself feel utterly at Tom’s mercy. She could feel herself flowing with energy once more as every part of her rejoiced at this barbarian of a man using her.

Tom was not a wereshark and he was no sylph so his strength began to wane but he was a red blooded reaction to third wave feminism and here was the perfect precious delicate symbol of it, quiet in her supplication to him.

Daniella’s moan grew louder and higher with each successive thrust and she could feel less of herself each time, becoming more and more an extension of Tom.

Tom’s breathing was growing haggard as he forced himself to keep a steady pace with Daniella.

Daniella felt the energy consume her until all she was and all she knew was a bliss so overwhelming it forced her to scream before leaving her mute and panting.

Tom waited until he heard Daniella’s crescendo before allowing himself to reach his own creschendo.

Daniella grinned and said quietly. “Thank you.”

Tom staggered backwards and removed the condom as he muttered. “Likewise.”

“My Queen, why did you just fuck our torturer?” asked a familiar voice.

Tom was started. “Fucking hell!”

Daniella looked to where Lisa stood looking at them accusingly and chuckled. “Hey, Lisa, have a nice sleep?”

“I’m- I’m umm... I’ll just-” Tom staggered to a sink to clean himself.

Lisa glared at Daniella. “He shoved metal poles through us and roasted us alive...”

Daniella sighed. “I know but I’m straight-”

“You’re straight?” said Lisa. “So Riksu, Lucy and Artemis are what?”

“Well Artemis’s actually my owner and Lucy’s more sort of my best friend...” said Daniella.

Lisa stared at Daniella.

Daniella grimaced. “Alright, I’m not straight but I thought I was. I was at university and I liked guys but now... Now there’s so many beautiful women and - But the point is that I still like cock, I still like men and I still want men.”

Lisa leaned over Daniella and said very quietly. “He roasted us on spits...”

“Yes...” said Daniella. “But you see that was all part of his cunning plan to get close to me and you were not supposed to get involved.”

Lisa frowned and looked away, blushing. “I didn’t want you to suffer alone.”

“I know...” said Daniella as she reached out to place comforting hand on Lisa’s shoulder. “You’re a good girl.”

Lisa looked back to Daniella and asked. “Really? I know I imprinted on you and that wasn’t your fault but I... I would die for you.”

“It’s okay.” said Daniella as she patted a space on the counter beside her. “You are mine as I am Artemis’s and I adore you. I know I don’t say it but I do.”

Lisa smiled a small little smile then took to the counter behind Daniella. “Do you really mean that? I mean I haven’t done anything to earn that.”

Daniella ran a hand through Lisa’s hair and said. “You have always had my back, Lisa. You named me Queen, you let me slaughter you and now here you are because you could not stand by and watch me suffer. You are my knight and I have a duty of care to you that I have not been displaying. I am so so sorry.”

Lisa almost mewled. “But I don’t just want to be your knight.”

“And you’re not.” said Daniella stroking Lisa’s cheek. “You are my adorable and sweet little girl and I should like you to live with me when all this is over.”

“But you and Riksu?” asked Lisa as she frowned.

Daniella chuckled. “Me and Riksu would love to have you as our pet”

Lisa said. “I’m not sure I know how to be a pet.”

Daniella pulled Lisa to her chest and continued to stroke her. “Well don’t worry I think you’re a natural and I can teach you on the finer points. You are mine, Lisa, and I will get you out of here.”

Lisa squeezed Daniella back and asked. “So what happens now?”

“Well I have to go see Lucy and while I’m gone I’d like you to let Tom slaughter you if that’s okay?” said Daniella.

“Is that his name?” asked Lisa bitterly.

“Honey...” said Daniella gently.

“I’ll do it. Just won’t be as fun as when you and Riksu do it.” said Lisa irritably. “And Artemis...”

Daniella giggled. “Well you’re more than welcome to join us for dinner someday.”

Lisa looked up at Daniella. “Are you serious?”

Daniella kissed Lisa on the forehead then looked her right in the eyes. “I’m serious.” Daniella stroked Lisa’s cheeks. “Artemis would love to have you over. Both as a guest and a main course.”

Lisa giggled then whispered. “When Artemis sliced into me, I kinda liked it.”

“Well maybe I’ll have Artemis give Tom some pointers.” said Daniella as she squeezed Lisa tight.

Lisa giggled and blushed.

Tom coughed awkwardly. Now properly dressed again, he stood before the two women with a roll of kitchen paper. “Dany, you need to get one of your friends to extract what I left in your heart. You might want to clean up first.”

“Well I can do that.” said Lisa.

Tom looked to Daniella.

“Oh, Tom, this is Lisa. She’s my pet and she’s agreed to let you practise your slaughtering skills on her before I arrive back here.” said Daniella by way of explanation. “She can clean me up if she wants.”

Lisa edged herself off the counter.

Tom presented the kitchen roll to her.

Lisa went down on her knees and buried her face between Daniella’s legs.

Daniella’s eyes widened in shock then softened as a smile spread across her lips.

Tom watched with nervous curiosity.

Lisa stood up and licked her lips. “There. All clean.”

Tom looked Daniella.

Daniella smirked and ruffled Lisa’s hair. “Good girl.”

Tom stared at Daniella.

Daniella shrugged.

Tom looked to Lisa. “Right... So...”

Lisa sighed. “Lets see how good your knife skills are.”

Daniella jumped off the counter and stroked Lisa’s hair. “Be gentle with her, won’t you. I care a good deal about her.”

Tom nodded. “If she matters to you, she matters to me.”

Daniella kissed Lisa on the forehead and hugged her. “And you? Try not to burst his ear drums.”

Lisa giggled.

Daniella turned to go but as she left she noticed a box of plastic bendy straws and took it with her.

*

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella arrived at her old haunt in the mead hall to find Lucy sat with Hai and Hotaru as they processed the last of the day’s slaughters. Hai and Hotaru each wore collars and simple leather jerkins and skirts while Lucy wore a three piece suit without the jacket.

“Ah, the prodigal daughter returns.” said Hai with a smirk.

“How was the spit?” asked Hotaru curiously. “There was quite the queue for a taste of your sweet ass.”

Hai chuckled.

Lucy put down the foot she was peeling and rose from her bench to meet Daniella. “Where’s Lisa!?”

There was no mistaking the panic Lucy’s voice so Daniella cried back quickly. “Safe and happy!”

Lucy ran to Daniella and lifted her up in the air with the force of her hug then she kissed Daniella lightly on the lips and looked her in the eyes. “Tell me the truth, I can take it.”

“Safe and happy.” said Daniella as she held Lucy’s gaze.

Lucy was silent as she held Daniella’s gaze for a moment then she grinned and scooped Danielle up in her arms. “Then, my Princess, we have much to discuss.”

As Lucy carried Daniella over to the bench Daniella said. “You’ve changed.”

Lucy chuckled. “I guess I have.”

Hai cheered as Lucy returned with Daniella. “Yeah, girl. You claim that ass.”

Lucy lowered Daniella onto the table then said. “I’ll fetch your clothes.”

“You will do no such thing.” said Daniella curtly. “I will not be needing them.”

Lucy frowned and looked confused.

Hai and Hotaru sniggered.

“You will park your arse down on the bench beside me.” said Daniella sternly. “Is that clear?”

Lucy sighed and took a seat. “As you wish, my Princess.”

“So how are you two doing?” asked Daniella of Hai and Hotaru.

Hai said. “Your mistress dropped off the leather she’d tanned from your hides so we are no longer condemned to immodesty and our own attempts at tanning are making progress.”

“The stench is not pleasant but fortunately it is concealed somewhat by the stench of all the rotting flesh so that’s something.” said Hotaru bitterly then she sighed and looked to Daniella. “We are making progress on building up an artillery though. We’ve got daggers, tool handles and are already applying bonding twine made from hair now. It’s not perfect and we could really do with more shark teeth but we are in a much much better position. And as the days tick by and our students grow more experienced our arsenal can only grow.”

“Excellent.” said Daniella with a smile. “Did you get a chance to try me by the way?”

Hai and Hotaru looked to each other, confused, realised neither knew more than the other then looked to Daniella. “Excuse me?”

Daniella smirked. “Well you really should.”

“You are their Queen.” said Lucy icily. “Why would they eat you?”

“Because they are my disciples and I give them myself willingly.” said Daniella wryly.

Lucy snorted. “Speaking of cannibalism Riksu asked me to give you something when I was slaughtering her today.”

Lucy rose from the table and walked away.

Daniella looked after her, confused.

“Were you serious?” asked Hai uncertainly. “About wanting us to eat you?”

Daniella shrugged then looked to Hai. “I’m not asking you to fry me up or stick me on a spit you understand. I don’t especially want to be eaten but if I’m going to go on a spit anyway I would

rather I was enjoyed by those I cared about."

Hai smiled and went back to her peeling.

"I thought you didn't like us." asked Hotaru. "Like it always seems to be you four. Lucy, Riksu, Lisa and You. We never get involved."

Daniella frowned. "I care about you. I care about you plenty. I may not be actively in love with you, want to fuck you or want you to curl up at the foot of my bed but I still care about you. While we're off breaking our hearts, here you are... Just quietly running things."

Hotaru smiled. "Well good, because I care about you."

"As do I." said Hai, then she took Hotaru's hands in hers and looked at her lovingly.

Hotaru returned the gaze.

"Wait are you...?" asked Daniella.

"We're keeping it quiet for now." said Hai with a smile.

"Don't want to make it official until things are more certain." said Hotaru.

"But if we did decide to make it official would you witness us?" asked Hai hesitantly. "I think a union before the eyes of a Queen is official enough."

Daniella was overwhelmed. "Of course. I'm so happy for you ladies. Absolutely. Absolutely I will witness you."

"And could we have you and Riksu as our reception banquet." asked Hotaru, completely straight faced.

Daniella nodded. "Absolutely. Of course. Perfectly fine by me and hey if you want me to hang around afterwards to help you on your honeymoon you only have to ask."

Hotaru nodded. "And if we wanted to keep you around in our larder afterw -Ahaha!" Her deadpan disintegrated into laughter.

Daniella frowned.

Hai reached out to squeeze Daniella's hand. "She was joking dear. We have no intention of actually eating you or of enjoying your other assets, just the witnessing will be enough."

Daniella stared at her.

Lucy arrived back with a large platter upon which were arrayed a selection of cuts of meat.

"What is that?" asked Daniella curiously

"Riksu's bum, breasts and her arms and legs. All boned and skinned of course. " said Lucy.

Daniella stared at the tray."You're kidding me, right?"

“Nope.” said Lucy as she lay the tray on the table beside Daniella. “She still loves you and she still wishes to serve you. She’s just struggling with the idea of being your lover and your prey so since this was only going to go to waste anyway she wanted you to have it.”

Daniella stared at the tray. Flies were buzzing over the meat. “Maybe you should ask Artemis about getting a fridge down here?”

Lucy smirked. “Perhaps you have a point. I’ll see what I can do, though I might have to barter pretty hard...” Lucy looked at Daniella pointedly.

Daniella smirked. “Well you can tell her that if she gets a fridge or freezer large enough to keep several bodies in down here then she can have me however she wants me, including but not limited to, on a spit, in her bed and in her belly.”

Lucy stared at Daniella and licked her lips.

Daniella grinned and blushed.

Lucy said. “Princess, there’s something I need to tell you and I don’t know if you’re going to believe me or how you’ll react if you do but I swore to serve you so I have to tell you...”

“I know...” said Daniella as she rose from the table to stand before Lucy. “I know.”

“How?” asked Lucy. “You can’t possibly know.”

“Because we were slaughtered in the same tub.” said Daniella as she looked Lucy right in the eyes. “Our blood, the blood of the weresharks, had already mixed by the time you realised you were a reincarnation of Lucy Danse, the Paragon of Virtue, whose soul is bound to that of the Farsh-nuke. So when I was on the spit, being carved up like steak, the eyes of the Farsh-nuke looked out through you and decided to help.”

Lucy stared at Daniella and stroked her hair. “But you are my Princess, my precious adorable Princess...”

Daniella nodded and wrapped her arms about Lucy. “I met him, Lucy, the Great Farsh-nuke. I met him and he explained everything to me. I know why you love me.”

Lucy bit her lip and stroked Daniella’s cheek.

“The Farsh-nuke fell in love with you but you are the Farsh-nuke so in the absence of any better alternative...” Daniella shrugged.

Lucy mewled. “I love you.”

Daniella gave Lucy a peck on the lips then said. “And I love you, as a friend, as a pet and as a loyal comrade.”

“But not as a romantic partner...” said Lucy, crestfallen.

“I need Riksu...” said Daniella quietly

Lucy glared at Daniella, she bit back venom as her fingers tightened painfully about Daniella.

Daniella said. “I know you’re hurt but the man who put me on the spit, he did it for me, so he could get close to me without being under suspicion. There is something in one of my hearts and I want you to remove it.”

Lucy said icily. “If you’ve met the Great Farsh-nuke then you know what I am capable of...”

Daniella nodded. “And that’s exactly why I’m asking you. I need someone who knows their way around a knife. I need a butcher.”

Lucy held Daniella’s gaze for a moment then she nodded. “Okay. You’re still my Queen. No matter how much it hurts, I’ll serve you.”

Lucy let Daniella go then picked up a knife. “So... This man of yours? You said he did it to get close to you? Has he fucked you yet?”

“Yeah, as it happens, he has.” said Daniella casually. “Just now in fact.”

“What’s his name?” asked Lucy as she returned to Daniella with a knife. “Was he sweet and sensual or gruff and brutish.”

“Tom.” said Daniella. “And he is very brutish.”

Lucy made an incision into Daniella’s chest. “Sounds like a douchebag.”

Daniella gasped. “Yeah, he kinda is.”

Lucy stuck her hand inside Daniella’s chest. “So you’ve got all your bases covered then. Tom to dominate you, Riksu to let you be the dominator.”

Daniella nodded and bit her tongue as Lucy felt each heart in turn.

“You know I could always make a copy?” said Lucy as she pulled out one of Daniella’s hearts and cut it free. “Just pull out one of these and watch it grow into a beautiful delicate flower.”

Daniella moaned weakly.

Lucy sliced the still beating heart open to reveal a small device wrapped in plastic. “Well here it is Princess. Was it worth it?”

Daniella took the device from Lucy and examined it. “It’s a smart watch. A linux one by the looks of it with wifi built in.”

Lucy looked to Daniella warily, her sliced up heart was still beating in the palm of Lucy’s hand. “Do you think we could use that to gain info about where the fuck we are?”

“Worth a shot don’t you think?” asked Daniella. “But I think I should let the war hero do that job.”

Lucy stared at the still beating heart.

“You could have her if you wanted.” said Daniella as she looked curiously at Lucy. “I mean I’m not

sure what she'd think and I'm not sure we want those that run this facility to know we have this ability but if you did want her I wouldn't stand in your way."

Lucy crushed the heart in her hands and ground it into dust. "I want you. Not some discarded copy. You."

Daniella nodded then held up the pack of straws. "Good thing I bought these then."

Lucy looked first at the straws and then at Daniella. "Oh... Honey, you really shouldn't have. You know what I can do. What I like."

Daniella opened the pack, picked out a straw, placed it between index and forefinger, reached out to Lucy's neck, placed index finger and thumb either side of an exposed vein in her neck, tore her vein in two and rammed one end of the straw in the vein against the flow of blood.

Lucy gasped. "Honey..."

Daniella took a suck on the straw then grinned. "Oh yes, very delightful."

Lucy snorted. "I'll drink you dry, Princess"

Daniella nodded and stroked Lucy's hair. "You've earned it, Paragon."

Lucy stared at Daniella. "You're serious?"

"You are the Agrippa to Octavius." said Daniella as she met Lucy's gaze. "You are the woman I trust to train our small loyal band into fierce warriors. You are a proven general and war hero. I need you as my second in command but more than that, I owe you a duty of care. I freed you and I imprinted on you. You may be a Farsh-nuke but you're still a sylph and you're still a Lucy so you need an owner. It is my honour and duty to play that role. So drink."

Lucy smirked, nodded, pulled a straw from the pack and rammed it up Daniella's jugular. She took several long drags on the straw then stood back and panted.

Daniella moaned with pleasure and was lost in a daze for a moment then she sucked upon the straw in Lucy's neck and said. "I think that when we get out of this that I might have to have you move in with us. You'd be so fun at dinner time."

"As would you, my dear." said Lucy with a smile.

"Get the strap on." said Daniella.

Lucy grinned and ran to get it.

Hai asked. "Do you want us to go?"

"No." said Daniella as she shook her head. "You'll be needed in a moment to process Lucy. Besides what is there to hide?"

Lucy returned with the silicon cock. "You really want to do this?"

Daniella advanced on Lucy and ran a hand through beautiful long blonde hair. "You are mine,

Lucy, do you understand that? Mine."

Daniella kissed Lucy sensually on the lips, finished off by grabbing her bottom lip between her teeth and pulling back slightly before she let go. "Mine."

Lucy was slightly dazed. "I'm yours?"

Daniella sucked on the straw in Lucy's neck and started undressing her. "Yes, Lucy, you belong to me. You are my sylph and your body is mine to command."

Lucy blushed. "I am your sword and your shield, my Princess."

"That must make you very thirsty." said Daniella sweetly.

"Oh, it does." said Lucy as she took a sip from the straw in Daniella's neck.

"Why don't have some milk?" asked Daniella as she stroked Lucy's face and removed more of Lucy's clothes. "I must keep my brave shining knight hydrated."

Lucy grinned. "My Princess is kind and generous." Lucy sucked at Daniella's left breast and swallowed down the milk that was produced.

Daniella moaned with elation.

Lucy stood up when she had had her fill.

Daniella strapped the cock about her person. "Oh, I am a very kind and generous princess, Lucy, and I have decided to give you a fucking. Would you like one?"

Lucy giggled and pulled Daniella lose so she could stare into her eyes, stroke her face and run a hand through her hair. "My dear I can think of very little else I should like more."

Daniella ran a hand through Lucy's hair and smiled. "Good, because I really appreciate you very very much, Lucy."

"And I, you." said Lucy.

"Now..." Daniella docked the cock inside Lucy. "Who do you belong to?"

"You." said Lucy, almost entirely naked.

Daniella smiled and thrust again. "Who?"

"You." said Lucy as Daniella stimulated her.

Daniella drove Lucy backwards and round in an arc until Lucy was backed onto the table. Each successive thrust given with a "Who?" and met with a "You."

Lucy was overloaded with energy as each successive thrust satisfied her more and more.

Daniella was not overloading with energy, if anything compared to past experiences this was positively pedestrian and a rather draining experience at that but all the same it felt good to make

someone with such a rich a complex history so utterly submissive and satisfied before her.

Finally Lucy screamed with elation then started panting.

“Sit up.” commanded Daniella.

Lucy sat up, still panting.

Daniella smiled and stroked Lucy then took good long drag on the straw in her neck.

Lucy grinned. “Thank you.”

“Get on the floor and kneel before me.” said Daniella.

Lucy held Daniella’s gaze for a moment then shimmied off the table and knelt of the floor before Daniella.

“Clean me.” said Daniella.

Lucy placed her lips about the silicon cock and licked it clean.

“Good girl.” said Daniella as she ran a hand through Lucy’s hair.

Daniella removed the strap on and tossed it on the table.

Lucy licked her lips as she looked with anticipation at what was revealed before her.

“Lick me out.” commanded Daniella.

Lucy ventured her tongue into Daniella’s gash.

Daniella gasped. “Good girl.”

Lucy buried her face between Daniella’s legs as Daniella moaned.

Daniella felt the energy overwhelm her now until finally she cried. “Good girl!”

Lucy licked Daniella clean then looked up to her.

Daniella looked down at Lucy and stroked her face. “Swallow.”

Lucy swallowed.

They looked at one another for a long moment then Lucy asked. “Anything else, Princess.”

“Drink me.” said Daniella.

Lucy rose to her feet, embraced Daniella and started drinking from the straw in her neck.

“There’s a kitchen behind the spits Tom puts us on.” said Daniella as Lucy drank. “There’s a chest in there where he keeps us while we recover. You’ll find our skins, bones, scalps and brains in there. Fetch them while we’re on the spits.”

Lucy took a break from drinking Daniella. “Okay. I’ll do my duty.”

“And check the nearby fridge while you’re at it.” said Daniella thoughtfully. “I’ll see if I can’t have some of me and Lisa put in there for you and the girls to eat.”

“Thank you.” said Lucy graciously. “And I might pay you a visit while you’re on the spit as well if that’s okay?”

“Fantastic.” said Daniella with a grin. “Now, turn around. Tom is waiting for me with his knife but before I meet him I want to ensure you’re properly harvested.”

Lucy smiled and turned around. “I appreciate it.”

Daniella picked up a knife. “Lucy, you are my precious, adorable, dependable general and I swear to you that no matter what reality we are on and what version of us is doing the speaking I will always do everything I can to protect you and keep you safe because I do love you.”

*

August the 30th 2019 - Thirty Minutes Later

Daniella removed Lucy’s brain and placed it on the table with her hands, feet, arm and leg bones, skin, what remained of her head, torso and bum and her scalp.

Hai and Hotaru wordlessly started processing the pile harvested from Lucy as Daniella carefully stacked the flesh she’d carved from Lucy’s arms, legs, bum and breasts atop the tray carrying Riksu’s flesh.

Then Daniella scooped Lucy’s hearts up in her arms and carried them into the sleeping quarters so Lucy could recover. As Daniella laid Lucy’s hearts down in the dark, she smelt a familiar smell and felt three hearts beating away rhythmically as she heard a stead steady breathing. Riksu was lying there, almost fully healed now. Daniella paused for a moment then left Lucy’s hearts in the dark beside Riksu.

Hai said, without looking up from her work processing Lucy’s left hand. “We’ll let her know you stopped by.”

Hotaru added. “And that you didn’t take anything except that which was given willingly.”

Daniella asked. “Is it really necessary to say that?”

Hai looked pointedly at Daniella. “It might be, yeah.”

Daniella sighed then picked up the tray carrying Lucy and Riksu’s flesh. “Well, see ya.”

“Process you later.” said Hai.

“Make a bra from that tight ass of yours later.” said Hotaru.

Daniella walked off as she chuckled and carried the tray.

*

August the 30th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella arrived to find Tom lowering Lisa's hearts into the chest. There was a large set of shark jaws on the floor beside a puddle of blood while Lisa's body lay dismembered on the table. Her hands and feet had been roughly cut off, her scalp and hair lay on a counter to one side. Her skull had been cracked open like a boiled egg with what remained of her brain scooped out into a jar. Her chest had three large slices in it meeting in the middle, like how autopsies were performed on TV. Her ribs had seemingly been broken with a hammer and the hearts extracted very roughly with organs and veins pulled out of shape. Her arms and legs were still very much attached to her body.

Damiella tutted, shook her head and laid the tray down on a free counter top.

"What's the matter?" asked Tom. "You wanted her slaughtered. I slaughtered her."

Daniella glared at him. "You have very bad form."

Tom glared back at her. "She's bloody slaughtered, isn't she?"

"She's certainly scalped and bodiless but to call that slaughter is to call a stolen tele on breeze blocks interior design." said Daniella dryly. She walked over to Lisa's body picked up a knife and started skinning her lower left leg. "I've slaughtered Lisa many times and you don't just hack her hands and feet off and call it a day. You've got to skin her, dismantle her and bone her. You don't attack her with a knife and hammer. You ease the skin from her flesh, the flesh from her bones and the brain from her body."

Daniella gestured to Lisa's caved in head. "She would have felt that. You turned her brain to yoghurt."

Tom stared at Daniella. "What are you saying?"

"I'm saying you need to improve because I can always go back to my friends for a proper slaughter and my body deserves a proper slaughter, not some half arsed back alley rough housing." said Daniella, clearly furious.

Tom frowned. "You came to me, remember? You wanted this, remember?"

"I wanted you to do it right." said Daniella irritably.

Tom groaned. "Well, what do I do then?"

"I have to put the flesh of some friends of mine in the fridge. While I do that see what you can do about properly skinning and boning what remains of Lisa and if I think you can be trusted with the responsibility I'll let you slaughter me." said Daniella.

"Okay..." said Tom as he picked up a knife and headed to work on Lisa.

"Either way, tomorrow when you see my owner you are asking her for lessons." said Daniella as she started piling cuts of Lucy's flesh into tupperware. "The friend I just fucked and slaughtered will be stopping by here to pick up mine and Lisa's remains from the chest while we're on the spit. Have a word with her as well, she might be able to give you some pointers and even a few girls to practise on."

Tom shot Daniella a questioning look. “So, I fuck up slaughtering your friend and your response is to advise me to talk to your owner and friend? Not to just fuck off? Why? I put you on a fucking spit.”

Daniella froze then she finished piling Lucy’s flesh into tupperware and went to embrace Tom from behind. “I like you. God help me, I’m a fucking feminist and I should hate you but I don’t. I like how small and fragile I feel in your hands. I like that every time we have met you have utterly, effortlessly, dominated me. And I shouldn’t. I know I shouldn’t. You are the epitome of patriarchal bigotry but I like you and I want you to dominate me, slaughter me and fuck me. I just want you to do it right.”

Tom was very glad that Daniella could not see his face as he was certain his ears were burning. To distract himself he focused on skinning Lisa. First the left leg. “I grew up a housing estate. All the immigrants - Polish, Indian, Chinese, whatever… - they’d have jobs as plumbers or electricians, they’d run cornerships and curry houses. Meanwhile me and me mates were on the dole and we were frankly lucky if we could get that so we used to make a living stealing from all these rich immigrants and selling to our broke arse friends. Some mates of mine became drug dealers or pimps but I never really got anywhere.”

Tom groaned as he realised he couldn’t finish skinning Lisa’s left leg as he had to get to the underside.

“Yeah, bodies are cylindrical things, if you’re gonna skin them it helps if either they are alive and willing to cooperate or you hack them up so you can easily spin them.” said Daniella as she hugged him from behind. “I recommend removing the leg at the pelvis but stretching the leg out and to the side to expose the tendons.”

“Right...” said Tom as he pulled the leg to the side to expose and then cut through the tendons keeping the leg joined to the pelvis.

“Keep going.” said Daniella gently. “I am listening. You had a rough childhood, yeah?”

“Yeah...” said Tom as he hacked the left leg clear of the pelvis and finished skinning it. “Lads like me, we fell through the cracks. We weren’t the elite, we didn’t go to university, we didn’t work as bankers or hedge fund managers. To call us the patriarchy seemed absurd. How the fuck did we have privilege? Like the LGBT lot, the Muslims and all the foreigners would all have various interest groups looking out for them but who the fuck looks out for the poor cis straight white man? No one. Fucking no one. No one good anyway because how dare the privileged express despair and resentment? So only those who genuinely hated LGBT folk, Muslims and foreigners looked out for us.”

Tom finished skinning Lisa’s left leg.

Daniella pulled the skin aside and whistled approvingly. “Not a bad job. Maybe I can end the night by your blade.”

Tom removed Lisa’s right leg and started skinning it. “Because the feminists abandoned us, the lost boys were raised by bigots. I was taken in by neo nazis. There’d be all these pretty blonde beauties and I never stood a chance. Poverty doesn’t tend to lend itself to good looks and toned muscles. So I’d pay them.”

Daniella stiffened noticably behind Tom. “Pay them?”

“I was good to them.” insisted Tom as he skinned Lisa’s right leg. “Compared to the others I was a fucking saint. I always wore a condom and I always looked after them and I would be fucking gentle.”

“I thought you were poor?” asked Daniella uncertainly.

Tom’s voice hardened. “Not exactly. I dealt drugs so I had a bit of money. Some of those girls didn’t. I offered them food and shelter. Once they were in that situation they’d choose me.”

Daniella was silent for a long moment. Tom could hear her quickened breathing.

Tom chose to focus on the task at hand and soon he’d removed Lisa’s left arm and was in the process of skinning that.

“Did you ever stop?” asked Daniella.

Tom nodded. “Frank found me taking a girl one night. 19 she was. Beautiful thing. He injected her with something after I’d done my business and forced her to look into my eyes. From that moment the girl was in love with me. He gave her to me, called it a philanthropic service and offered me a job far from home.”

Tom finished skinning Lisa’s left arm and turned to Daniella. “That was 20 years ago and I was just 20 myself.” Tom looked into Daniella’s eyes almost pleading. “Frank taught me to be a better man. He taught me about manners and consent and respect. He taught me to see you as human beings so that I would not underestimate you.”

“You’ve been fucking that poor girl all this time?” asked Daniella.

Tom shook his head. “You lose the taste for it once you see what that stuff is used for.” Tom looked Daniella in the eyes. “You are the only girl who has ever genuinely wanted me. No one else. Not ever. My closest was brainwashed by the same drug that keeps so many obedients heading toward their slaughter everyday. Fortunately there is a cure and she wasn’t a wereshark so she could take it. She chose to stay with me because she has nowhere else and I guess stockholm syndrome is a bitch but I haven’t touched her in a decade, I swear.”

Daniella stared at Tom. “You aren’t just my fancy bit of rough are you? You really are quite genuinely monstrous aren’t you?”

Tom shrugged. “I won’t lie to you, I’ve got blood on my hands and more blood than just that which comes from being Frank’s right hand man but I promise you I am not the boy I once was. I would never ever take advantage of you, unless you wanted me to take you.”

Daniella stared at Tom as she struggled to think of what to say.

“Look I know I’m a bastard and that Lucifer will have something pretty lined up for me but you don’t have to be with me if you don’t want to. Heck I can get myself reassigned so you don’t even have to look at me or feel me when you’re going on the spit.” said Tom.

Daniella frowned and shook her head. “I can’t do that.” Daniella looked Tom in the eyes. “I have to lead a revolution, I have to be responsible for so much bloodshed and suffering. You took advantage of people, that is horrible, no question. Something else that’s horrible is slaughtering

your friends and girlfriends because you need the supplies that can be gained by doing so. Now alright my sins are for some higher purpose but you've changed and you are better while I am fantasising about eating my girlfriend alive and plotting bloody revolution."

Tom stared at Daniella. "So what are you saying?"

"I'm saying that we are meant for each other." said Daniella as she wrapped her arms about Tom's neck. "I am a feminst submissive wants a good fucking and a good slaughtering and you are a monster in want of a pretty blonde thing to fuck, dominate and be enlightened by."

A sly smile spread across Tom's lips.

Daniella kissed them.

Tom ran a hand through Daniella's hair and squeezed her bum. "Any chance of watching you and your girlfriends enjoy each other sometime?"

"Only if you promise to slaughter us afterwards." said Daniella with a smirk.

Tom chuckled and caressed Daniella.

Daniella giggled.

They each stared longingly into each other's eyes.

Then Daniella said. "You better start boning Lisa."

Tom smirked. "If you'd like, though I'm not sure what she'd think."

Daniella giggled. "No, that's what I meant. I meant you've nearly finished skinning her, you better start carving the flesh off her."

Tom pushed Daniella away and chuckled. "Well if that doesn't kill a promising boner I don't know what does."

Daniella giggled.

Tom turned back to skinning Lisa.

Daniella watched Tom work with a bizarre feeling of pride then she went back to the tupperware boxes of flesh found a sharpie marker pen and writ on the boxes the names of who the flesh came from. Not long after she had Lucy and Riksu's flesh in correctly labelled containers in the fridge.

Daniella checked up on Tom and found that he had relatively cleanly removed the flesh from the bones in Lisa's legs and was in the process of removing it from her arms. Daniella decided to pack up the flesh as Tom worked.

As Tom cleaved flesh from bone, he asked. "What are you doing?"

"Putting the flesh in correctly labelled containers then storing it in the fridge." said Daniella.

"Why?" asked Tom.

“Because Sylph tastes good. Like my owner served me up a steak made from my girlfriend and oh my god, it was just to die for. Seriously you have to try her sometime.” said Daniella eagerly.

Tom rolled his eyes. “Did she see it that way?”

“Well we can find out when you slaughter me tonight and pack my flesh up in the fridge for us to try tomorrow.” said Daniella cheerfully.

“Right...” said Tom.

“Oh and there is just the most delightful trick we have to try involving straws. How are you with severing arteries?” asked Daniella.

“Alright, I guess?” said Tom.

“Excellent.” said Daniella happily. “It’s a date then. Tomorrow we can try a banquet of sylph as you drink me dry.”

Tom looked up from his work and stared at Daniella. “Seriously? That’s what you meant by straws?”

“But it feels so good.” said Daniella earnestly. “And then afterwards you could fuck me and slaughter me. It’d be ace.”

Tom rolled his eyes and sighed. “My life was simpler and so much less insane before I met you.”

Daniella chuckled and snatched up another part of Lisa’s flesh to put in a tupperware box. “You love me really.”

When Tom came to skinning Lisa’s torso, he groaned. “Well I’ve fucked this up haven’t I?”

Daniella looked where he was gesturing and nodded. “Yeah but she’ll grow another one and my girls are very good at processing. Salvage what you can and then you can do with me what you should have done with her.”

“Skin first then reveal the bone by carving away the flesh and extract the hearts without breaking the ribcage?” asked Tom carefully.

“Exactly.” said Daniella as she pat him on the back enthusiastically.

So Tom skinned Lisa’s torso, carved what flesh he could from it, removed the organs then turned his attention to what remained of Lisa’s head.

Daniella finished loading Lisa’s flesh into labelled tupperware boxes and put it in the fridge then she stood watching Tom skin Lisa’s head with quiet pride and fascination.

Finally Tom stood back examining his handiwork. “Right, well I’m not sure there’s much flesh to be gained from the head but I have skinned it and I think that’s about everything.”

“Yeah... I think that’s about it too.” said Daniella brightly. “You’ve salvaged the job fairly well. I’m proud of you.”

Tom looked to Daniella awkwardly. “So...”

Daniella shivered and grinned. “I like when you look at me like that. It makes me all tingly.”

Tom grimaced. “I really really don’t want to do this.”

Daniella approached him, put her arms around him and looked into his eyes. “Then I am very very grateful that you are.” She kissed Tom on the lips. “Start from the scalp and we can work down from there...”

Tom squirmed. “You are sure you want to do this?”

Daniella smiled. “Absolutely. I entirely completely enthusiastically give my consent to this.”

Tom shrugged “Well, why not?.”

Daniella giggled as Tom’s knife entered the skin about her forehead. “Thank you.”

*

August the 31st 2019

Daniella woke up in a familiar darkness and felt Lisa sleeping peacefully beside her. Daniella rolled over and lay on her side then slid her left hand up Lisa’s body before she brought it to rest gently down on Lisa’s chest.

Daniella bit her lip. In a moment she would have to knock loudly and possibly scream to be let out so she and Lisa could be processed for the day.

Daniella’s face was so close now that her sense of smell, hearing and electroreception allowed her to almost see Lisa. The small blonde woman was utterly lost to the bliss of sleep, her breathing quiet and steady. Daniella frowned, looking without eyes at her charge.

Finally Daniella slid her right hand behind Lisa’s head carefully then grabbed Lisa’s forehead with her left hand.

Crack!

“Sweet dreams...” muttered Daniella.

“The fuck was that!?” cried an unfamiliar lady’s voice.

Daniella stared hammering on the led of the trunk with her knuckles. “Oi! Oi! Oi! Get us out!”

“Are you fucking kidding me!?” came the reply. “Is there actually someone in there?”

Daniella grimaced then cried. “Yes! I’m afraid I’m a little underdone!”

“Shit.” came the reply. “What do I do?”

“There’s a lock!” cried Daniella. “You want to find a key!”

“Where?” came the reply.

Daniella groaned. “I’m not exactly sure! A man named Tom put me in here!”

“Okay...” came the reply.

There was a few moments of scrabbling and scraping then the lid was lifted up.

Daniella stared up at her rescuer and squinted. “Do I know you?”

Her rescuer was a short brunette woman in a cardigan and slacks. “Well if it isn’t Princess Perfect. This is a surprise. And who’s your friend?”

Daniella frowned then looked to where Lisa lay beside her, apparently still in peaceful sleep. “She belongs to me and we both need slaughtering.”

“Of course, Geoff’s pretty little lambs, I suppose it’s a good thing I was here to let you out. I bet that arse is worth a pretty penny.” said Daniella’s rescuer.

Daniella rose to her feet and scooped Lisa up in her arms. “Check the fridge. If Tom did as he was supposed to, you should find my arse has been skinned and carved, ready for human consumption. Along with, other bits?”

“You are kidding aren’t you?” said Daniella’s rescuer.

Daniella towered over the woman as she carried Lisa in her arms. “I’m really not. If you want me, you’re free to have me.”

Daniella’s rescuer licked her lips. “I thought you were shacked up with Lucy now?”

Daniella chuckled and stepped out of the trunk. “Well I am a firm believer in the benefit of an open relationship.”

Daniella’s rescuer laughed. “You really don’t remember me, do you?”

Daniella shook her head. “Sorry.”

“Catherine...” said Daniella’s rescuer as she stroked Daniella’s face fondly. “I was there when Lucy first slaughtered you. We had such good sex when you were nothing but skin and bone.”

“Oh...” said Daniella as she remembered the bar tender who had played a joke on her.

Caterine pat Daniella on the bum. “Go on, get. Off to the slaughter with you. I’ll let you out for the duration of your time on the spit but I may have to have a word with your Lucy about a rather different kind of spit roast.”

Daniella giggled and strode away with Lisa.

*

Chapter 20
Red Flags And Wet Dreams

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

By the time Daniella walked through the black curtain and into Jake's slaughter room Lisa's neck had healed and she was sleeping peacefully in Daniella's arms.

"This is against regulations." said Jake pointedly.

Daniella shrugged. "I couldn't wake her."

Jake rolled his eyes.

Daniella lowered Lisa to the ground then crouched before her and stroked her face.

Lisa stirred. "My Queen..."

Daniella smiled and kissed Lisa on the forehead. "Time for Jake, hon."

Lisa grinned and got to her feet. "Jake!" She squealed.

Lisa's voice so high pitched that Jake winced in pain before hurriedly he reached over and snipped out Lisa's tongue.

Lisa giggled as blood poured from her mouth.

Jake sighed and set to work reaping Lisa. "So the word about town is you're on the spit for trying to start a rebellion?"

Daniella crossed her arms and leaned back against the door frame as she studied Jake as he worked. "And what if I am?"

"Well I hope it's just power games against the new girl." said Jake, without looking up as he reaped Lisa.

Daniella stared at Jake. "Why? You said so yourself that most of the other reapers aren't nice."

Jake looked up at Daniella. "Because if heads are gonna roll, mine will be included."

Daniella snorted. "Bit of an assumption, don't you think?"

Jake finished removing Lisa's arms and legs so now he set about carving her lower jawbone free from the flesh surrounding it. "Look at what I am doing, Daniella. You may like me and I may be good at what I do to you but if the others deserve to die, so do I. Competence should not excuse heinous acts."

Daniella shifted uncomfortably and looked to Jake's bloody array of knives. "Feminism does not preclude acts of violence so long as they are safe, sane and consensual."

Jake had to step back from Lisa as he burst out laughing. "I'm a reaper man, not a fucking dom for hire."

"Same difference to a weresylph." said Daniella pointedly.

Jake glared at Daniella.

Daniella met his gaze. “I like you Jake. I know you’re part of the system but I like you and if this goes down I promise you, you will be safe.”

Jake spat on the floor. “Yeah, well that’s going to be some cold fucking comfort when I’m witnessing my friends and colleagues dying by your hands.”

Daniella glared at Jake. “You? You get to live because I like you, because I trust you, because I want you. They - They don’t.”

Jake swallowed. “I won’t stand by and just let it happen you know? I don’t care how cute you are or how many good times we have. These are my friends that you are talking about murdering.”

Daniella shrugged. “Then they shouldn’t have slaughtered so many innocent women.”

Jake stared at Daniella for a moment then the strength seemed to sap from him. He groaned. “You’re already on the spit, don’t give them the excuse to do worse to you. Some of these lads would relish the opportunity if presented to them.”

“Oh don’t worry.” said Daniella acidly. “I’m going to be a good little girl and take my turn on the spit willingly.”

Jake nodded and went back to removing Lisa’s lower jaw bone. “So what would you do with me?”

“You’re mortal and you don’t heal.” said Daniella casually. “You won’t be a problem.”

Jake grimaced and worked in silence.

As Jake sliced though the roof of Lisa’s mouth, Daniella asked. “What do you know of a man called Tom?”

Jake froze then said after a moment. “I know of A Tom, yeah... Why do you ask?”

Jake stared at Daniella.

“This Tom’s the guy in change of putting me on the spit.” said Daniella carefully. “I may have a little bit of a crush on him.”

Jake shuddered then went back to slicing through the roof of Lisa’s mouth. “A few years ago there was a TV series, an adaptation of a much loved book series. Really dark stuff. Morally ambiguous heroes, rape, incest, paedophilia. Nasty shit but the worst of all was this bastard son of a traitorous monster. In a world of shit and misery, this clan was famous for flaying people alive and generally being the most abhorrent. Quite the feat when basically every good character dies or gets corrupted. And this bastard son was monstrous even by their standards.”

“What’s a TV series?” asked Daniella, confused.

“A Netflix series that can’t be binged.” said Jake irritated. “The point is that Tom always reminded me of that bastard son. I mean look at this place, look at where this conversation is taking place and Tom was the street urchin being groomed to inherit the company. Legends abound about him. None of them good. They even say he’s Frank’s heir apparent.”

Jake pulled Lisa's jaws free from her mouth then stalled as he fetched rather different knives to stare Daniella in the eyes. "You do not want to get involved with him. If anyone should die, it's that monster. He had to be taken off reaping duty because he was having too much fun and he made the Queen of Valhalla weep with agony. Not exactly good for maintaining order among the lambs that."

Daniella sighed.

Jake glared at Daniella. "Promise me?"

Daniella shook her head.

"He's already fucking you isn't he?" said Jake as he remembered Daniella's mad ramblings from yesterday about a Tom who liked to cut.

Daniella stared at Jake.

Jake groaned and plucked out Lisa's eyes then he started removing her scalp.

"You're disappointed in me aren't you?" asked Daniella.

Jake focused on removing Lisa's scalp. Once it was removed he set it on its conveyor belt then fetched a hammer and chisel to begin removing the top of Lisa's skull. "I think he's using you. The bastard can't remove Frank without invalidating himself as heir but you? You provide a convenient way around that particular problem. Don't trust him."

Jake removed the top of Lisa's skull then removed her brain.

Daniella watched him with curiosity then said. "I'd stop him if I could have you."

"I'm gay." said Jake firmly as he turned to Daniella.

"I don't need you to penetrate me, just slaughter me." said Daniella.

Jake stared at Daniella. "No."

Then Jake sent Lisa's remains into the next room and started reaping Daniella.

*

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up in the inky black of the shark tank with Lisa beside her.

"Hey..." said Lisa.

"Hey." said Daniella as she stroked Lisa's face.

Lisa blushed. "I waited for you. Thanks for letting me sleep."

Daniella grimaced then said awkwardly. "I may have, ever so slightly, snapped your neck to avoid waking you."

Lisa giggled.

Daniella spun in the water so she was treading water. “You’re not bothered?”

Lisa spun in the water to meet Daniella face to face. “It was a good sleep and if my Queen wants to snap my neck, who am I to disagree?”

Lisa leaned close to Daniella’s ear and whispered. “Besides you’re my owner, do what you like. I like it when you’re in charge.”

Daniella ran a hand through Lisa’s hair then said sadly. “I don’t even know who you were before all this went down.”

Lisa shrugged. “I’m 21, I am - I was studying to become an architect before this madness hit and I have a younger sister Cindy.”

Daniella smirked. “So what happens when this is over?”

Lisa smiled. “Well I’d like to finish my training and become an architect but I...” Lisa blushed. “I like you and I would be honoured if you’d keep possession of me once this is over. Maybe carve me up for Sunday roasts now and again.”

Daniella chuckled then kissed Lisa on the forehead. “You know you’re brainwashed, right?”

Lisa shrugged. “I like what I like.”

They looked at each other for a long moment with love and pride for the other. Then Lisa said. “You need to see Tom and I know what that means.”

Daniella smiled. “Thank you.”

Lisa hugged Daniella then said. “Do it.”

Daniella held Lisa’s head underwater and watched her suffocate.

Finally a great shark burst forth from Lisa and Daniella hitched a ride on its dorsal fin.

*

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

The shark swam into the underwater chamber and Tom lunged forward to pull Daniella away as Fred and George set to work slaughtering the shark.

Daniella looked Tom up and down excitedly. “Hi.”

“We must stop meeting like this.” said Tom with a smile as he brought a knife out of his pocket.

Daniella grinned then gasped as Tom sliced open one of her hearts.

Tom placed something inside the heart then smoothed over the wound and gave Daniella a peck on the lips. “For later.”

Daniella nodded. “And have you thought about what I said last night?”

Tom grinned and ran a hand through Daniella’s hair with one hand as he pulled her close with another. “If you are sure your owner won’t be an issue?”

Daniella giggled.

Fred coughed politely.

George was hyperventilating into a paper bag.

Tom looked at Daniella meaningfully.

Daniella smirked and nodded.

Tom fetched the hose.

*

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella lay in darkness as she waited for her legs to regrow.

A voice near her, Lisa, asked. “Why do you still like him?”

Daniella turned to the source of the noise and felt more than saw that Lisa was glaring at her. “What are you talking about?”

“Jake called Tom a monster and you’re still flirty with him.” said Lisa pointedly. “Why?”

Daniella tried to shrug, remembered she was supporting herself on her hands then said. “Well rumours are just rumours.”

“Then ask him if they are true.” said Lisa. “Please. You’re my Queen and I don’t want you to get hurt.”

Daniella crawled over to Lisa and reached out a hand to stroke Lisa’s face. “I give you my word. A queen can’t rule if she’s dead can she?”

Lisa nodded.

Daniella smiled and started stroking her hair.

After a few moment Lisa said. “You know you could have me for dinner if you wanted.”

Daniella paused and removed her hand cautiously.

Lisa looked deep into Daniella’s eyes. “I’m serious. I know Riksu meant and still means a lot to you and I want you to be happy so you- Well you could- If you wanted to-”

Daniella smirked and kissed Lisa on the forehead. “We will find you someone to be with, don’t worry, and as for me? Well I have plenty of options.”

Lisa smiled and threw herself at Daniella.

They lay hugging in the dark until Daniella felt Lisa's toes pressing against her shins.

"Come on." said Daniella sweetly. "Time for us to get milked."

Lisa nodded and they rose to their feet. "I wonder what kind of cheese we make?"

Daniella snorted and pat Lisa on the back. "Well maybe I'll ask Artemis for a book on cheese making so we can find out."

Lisa grinned. "Who would we milk though? I mean ideally we'd want someone with really big tits and that's not anyone I know."

Daniella glared at Lisa.

Lisa was lost in thought now as they walked. "I wonder what else we could make from us? Like maybe we could extract the lenses from our eyes and use them to make lazers and don't terrorists use fertilizer to make bombs? Well fertiliser is just shit right? We could make shit bombs."

Daniella burst out laughing.

Lisa glared at her.

"Well they really would be shit bombs." said Daniella in a temporary moment free from laughter.

"And actually isn't ammonia found in urine?" asked Lisa. "We could make mustard gas."

Daniella froze then frowned as the implications of that statement hit home. "Even if we could make it, it's against the Geneva convention."

Lisa stared at Daniella. "And what they're doing to us isn't?"

Daniella laughed nervously and the conversation died until finally they hooked the suction pumps over their breasts and placed their arms and legs into the indicated holes.

*

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke from a doze to find Lucy lying next to her.

Lucy wore a three piece tailored suit without the jacket and brown leather brogues. She was sat up partially, resting her head in her left hand as she watched Daniella.

"Hi." said Daniella with a smile. "What are you doing?"

Lucy reached out with her right hand and cleared the hair from Daniella's face. "Admiring my Princess."

Daniella glared at Lucy and said sternly. "I am your queen and you belong to me."

Lucy nodded and stroked Daniella's cheek. "But I am also the heir to the Great Farsh-nuke. Do you

know what that means?”

Daniella shrugged.

“It means I am the champion of sylphs so it is my duty to serve and protect the salvation of so many sylphs.” said Lucy as she looked down at Daniella with pride.

Daniella smiled and reached her left hand out to touch Lucy’s chest, navigating carefully through the waistcoat and tailored suit beneath.

Lucy’s tone darkened and her gaze shifted with her right hand down Daniella’s slim naked body. “It also means that I have a very deep hunger to dominate and possess a very powerful, very beautiful, pretty blonde woman.”

Daniella giggled. “You want me because I remind you of yourself?”

Lucy chuckled as her hand slid round to Daniella’s bum. “That’s my curse. I am the Farsh-nuke and I am that which the Farsh-nuke wants.”

Daniella bit her lip and looked deep into Lucy’s eyes.

The emotion had drifted away from Lucy’s voice now and she was almost clinical as she explained. “I want to break you, break every single one of your bones. I want to bind you and crush you and eat you. I want you to serve me and call me master. I want you to recognise me as your rightful owner and I want you to spend the rest of your long life at the end of my leash in rapt orgasmic adoration.”

Daniella blushed and whimpered in nervous anticipation.

Lucy leaned forward and kissed Daniella on the forehead then she leaned back and said. “But I can’t do that when we’re both stuck in here so I need to focus on serving you and your cause. And on ensuring that my beautiful little princess remains somewhat sane and well rested. I greatly enjoyed last night and I look forward to a similar outcome tonight but for now you need to have the right frame of mind for going on the spit. You need to submit.”

Daniella nodded.

“Roll over, there’s a good girl.” said Lucy sweetly

Daniella grinned and rolled onto her belly as she rested on her elbows and knees.

Lucy must have put on a strap on because the next moment Daniella felt herself being entered. She gasped.

“Now Princess what do you call me?” asked Lucy.

“Master?” asked Daniella uncertainly

Lucy sounded relieved and caressed Daniella’s neck. “Good girl.”

Then the thrusts began. It was almost like clock work. As tick followed tock so grunt and moan followed thrust and stroke.

Daniella felt herself gleefully subsumed by bliss. No more was she the Queen of the Free -plotting revolution. No more was she even Daniella Hopkins - academic feminist in training. In this moment she wasn't even her Master's Princess. She wasn't anybody or anything. She was part of Lucy now, an extension of the Paragon of Virtue, a flesh puppet entirely at her will.

Finally Daniella screamed loudly and fell silent as she panted.

Lucy exited Daniella and removed the strap on then she lay back down beside Daniella and said simply. "Thank you."

Daniella looked sideways and Lucy then threw herself on top of the suited woman and kissed her on the lips. "Yes. Yes. A thousand times yes. I want everything you have asked of me."

Lucy tried to kiss back and soon they were snogging then Lucy pulled back and said. "I guess it'd be fun to do the same with Riksu too."

Daniella grinned. "Not if I don't get to her first."

"I'll come back later." said a familiar voice that caused Daniella to freeze. "You're clearly busy."

"We've just finished actually." said Lucy. "You're more than welcome to join us though."

There was an awkward silence then Riksu said. "Kind though your offer is I have seen to Lisa and word is that the spit man is here."

Daniella shivered, remembering how it felt to have Tom's strong hand cleaving her flesh in twain. "Thank you, Riksu."

Riksu coughed then said awkwardly. "I live to serve, my Queen."

Daniella rose to her feet and turned to address Riksu.

Riksu wore a gorgeous tailored three piece suit with a long coat that ended at her shins. Lisa stood naked beside her.

Daniella tried to speak but she couldn't find the words so her jaw flapped in the air silently for a moment before Daniella looked away in shame and shrugged.

Riksu sighed and approached Daniella. She pulled the naked woman into a hug. "I still love you, Dany, and I still want to be your friend and to serve you as your knight. I want you to be happy, I want you to find solace and satisfy yourself with whoever you feel like and Lucy is a wonderful powerful woman. She will look after you. Even if I do decide I can forgive you and want to continue being in a relationship with you I won't stand between you too."

"I'm sorry." said Daniella at last.

"I know." said Riksu as she pulled out of the hug and held Daniella's hands in hers. "I don't begrudge you your culinary interests, heck I like a good reaping and I will make sure Lucy keeps you topped up with cuts of me for you to enjoy. I just don't know if I can be in a relationship with you if you want to eat me. How do I know whether you crave my flesh out of lust or hunger?"

Daniella shrugged. “It’s both. believe me, it is both and I would never hurt you.”

Riksu looked Daniella in the eyes. “But you do want to, don’t you? Admit it, you want me on that spit. You want to roast me and carve me and drink me.”

Daniella stared at Riksu for a long moment then nodded with a sigh.

Riksu kissed Daniella on the cheek then said. “There’s a girl that Kirsty’s lot look up to, a gorgeous brunette by the name of Rachel. Honestly she has the most beautiful long straight silky hair -” Riksu stopped herself and looked Daniella in the eyes. “We’re going to eat her alive tonight. Real big banquet to celebrate the first batch of armour and weapons made by our girls and the start of training tomorrow. If it all goes well and Rachel is left relatively unscathed by the ordeal then I figure I might volunteer as banquet when the first Sergeants are assigned and well then... Who knows? If I get a taste for it then maybe when you finish your time on the spit we can try things out between us again.”

Daniella swallowed and studied Riksu’s face cautiously, hardly daring to hope. “Are you serious?”

Riksu frowned. “I’m not saying it’s definitely going to happen because Rachel could change her mind or she might not like it or I might not like it...” Then Riksu blushed and gave a half smile. “But it could happen and for what it’s worth I hope it does because I still want us to be together.”

Daniella smiled.

Lucy coughed. “And if you do get back together I will support you, both of you.”

Riksu smirked then pulled Lucy and Daniella into a group hug. “Look at you two. you’re like twins but without the squick. If you don’t think I want a threesome with the both of you then you are bigger fools than I realised.”

Lucy snorted.

Daniella blushed.

Lisa asked. “What do I do then?”

Riksu chuckled and turned to stroke the face of her naked companion. “Well who exactly do you think we’ll have for starters?”

Lisa blushed.

Lucy desperately tried to hold back from laughing.

Daniella stroked Lisa’s face and looked to Riksu. “Did you and she really...?”

Riksu leaned close to Daniella and whispered in her ear. “Well my favourite blondes were otherwise occupied.”

Daniella smirked. “I think I want her as my pet.”

Riksu nodded. “Better than a house cat certainly.”

Lucy burst out laughing at last.

“Would you take me for walks?” asked Lisa.

Riksu smirked. “My father has a summer home by the river. She wouldn’t look too out of place among the spring breakers.”

Daniella grinned. “We’d have to find her a partner though, bit cruel to just have one.”

Riksu mused. “Well Lucy does like that Kirsty, think she could be tamed?”

Daniella stared at Riksu.

Riksu shrugged. “I think she’s nice.”

Lucy started coughing up from laughing then wheezed. “Perhaps I’ll have a word. I am the heir to the Farsh-nuke and she is a valley girl. It shouldn’t be too difficult.”

Lisa grinned. “I’ll have a sister.”

Lucy burst out laughing again.

“Anyway, we better go.” said Daniella to Riksu. “Thank you.”

Riksu ran a hand through Daniella’s hair and smiled. “I’ll make sure I’m slaughtered by the time you’re back off the spit so you can have more of me to eat and I will be waiting for you the day you come off it for good so we can have a talk about our relationship.”

Daniella smiled. “I’d like that.”

“Now go on, you have a steel beam to chow down on.” said Riksu with a smirk.

Daniella hugged Riksu then grabbed Lisa’s hand and walked away.

Lucy walked behind them and put an arm round each of Daniella and Lisa’s shoulders. It was a relaxed and friendly pose that also made it easy to snap each of their necks if they tried to run from their sentence.

As they walked Daniella saw Kirsty, dressed in cardigan and jeans, sitting beside a naked brunette with a collar round her neck. Kirsty appeared to be washing the brunette by using cake as a sponge to douse the naked woman with rum. A couple of women Daniella couldn’t remember the names of were also helping with the preparation of the naked brunette. One by braiding the brunette’s long hair and the other by shaving the hair that wasn’t on her head.

Daniella paused as she remembered something. She turned to Lucy and said. “You know you should consider getting a ponytail? I think it’d suit you.”

Lucy paused for a moment then nodded.

Kirsty noticed Daniella, Lisa and Lucy and waved them over. “Before you go on spit do you have any words of encouragement for our Rachel? She’s going to be our guest of honour at dinner tonight.”

The brunette looked over to the trio and waved. Then gasped as one of the ladies preparing her seized upon the opportunity to shave her armpit.

Lucy looked to Daniella and Lisa warily then sighed and steered them towards Kirsty.

“It is an honour to see you again, my Queen.” said the brunette.

Daniella pulled a face, clearly embarrassed that she couldn’t remember her.

“You called me braveheart and kept me calm as Artemis removed my tongue to begin my reaping.” said Rachel.

“Of course...” said Daniella as she remembered. She reached out a hand and stroked Rachel’s face. “And you were brave, Rachel. You were very brave in fact. I want you to be brave again tonight, can you do that?”

Rachel nodded. “I think so, Maam.”

“It’s going to be strange.” said Daniella as she looked into Rachel’s eyes. “Like nothing you have ever experienced before... But you are a sylph so you can enjoy the experience. You will become part of everybody tonight and they will remember what you did for them. It’s easy to sacrifice yourself to save another but sacrifice for the sake of entertainment is much harder to justify and so much more memorable when it happens. You don’t have to do this. You can say stop at any stage and that is precisely why you won’t. Because this is your moment. This is your sacrifice and you are going to make the most of this.”

Rachel was almost hypnotized by Daniella’s words. “I will make the most of this.”

“And you will enjoy this, you will love this. When people ask you what you felt about the experience you will reply truthfully that you would gladly spend your entire life reliving this day over and over because of how much you loved the experience.” said Daniella seriously..

Rachel nodded and echoed Daniella’s words. “I will reply truthfully that what I do now I would gladly do every day of eternity.”

Daniella kissed Rachel on the forehead. “Good girl.”

Kirsty, Lucy and Rachel’s other attendants were stunned.

Daniella looked to Kirsty. “I want a whip made from what you harvest from her tonight and a couple of daggers made from her femurs. See if you can avoid breaking the skull as I would like it as a memento of this day and save me her tongue and clitoris.”

Kirsty stared at Daniella. “Are you serious?”

Daniella nodded. “That was an order, Knight.”

Kirsty saluted. “As you wish, my Queen.”

Daniella returned to Lucy and Lisa.

Lucy looked nervously at Daniella then steered her and Lisa away from Kirsty and back in the direction of the spit.

After a moment Lucy asked. “What was that about the orders?”

“If Rachel enjoys tonight I get to be with Riksu. I intend to remember that.” said Daniella quietly..

Lucy nodded thoughtfully and guided her naked charges towards a quickly building throng of naked onlookers.

As they advanced through the crowd women would recognise them and start gossiping with their friends until a loud chatter built up.

Finally Lucy, Daniella and Lisa came within sight of the spit roaster. A pig was roasting merrily away on the bottom most spit but the two above it stood empty. The shafts had been removed and stood ready to the side of Tom as he leaned against one of the stanchions, a rifle slung over one shoulder and a gleaming knife carried in his primary hand. Twenty masked guards with assault rifles formed a semi-circular perimeter around the spit roaster.

Lucy swallowed upon catching sight of Tom and muttered. “We could take them you know? They’re mortal, we’re not. If we each take out one guard we can grab their guns and massacre the rest.”

“And give them the excuse to massacre everyone?” hissed Daniella in reply.

Lucy frowned and sighed.

Daniella turned to Lucy and kissed her on the lips. “I’ll be fine. Tom’ll look after me. Just make sure Rachel enjoys her special day and remember to get what was reaped from me and Lisa yesterday.”

Lucy nodded sadly then ran a hand through Daniella’s hair. “Just be careful, okay?”

Daniella smirked then she turned to Lisa and took her hands in hers. “Are you ready?”

Lisa frowned but she nodded.

Daniella strode through the final line of onlookers with Lisa then through the guarded perimeter around the spit roaster.

Tom smiled when he saw Daniella.

Daniella blushed and strode right up to Tom, looking him in the eyes the whole time.

Tom handed his rifle off to a guard without looking away from Daniella then readied his knife.

Daniella grinned as Tom’s knife entered her scalp.

Tom focused on removing Daniella’s scalp but when he noticed her smiling he gave a wink in return.

Daniella grinned until Tom turned her so he could finish peeling her scalp from the back of her

head.

Lisa watched all this with nervous anticipation as 3 guards had their guns pointed at her.

Tom cast Daniella's scalp aside at last and spun her round to face him.

Daniella mouthed wordlessly. "I love you"

Tom grinned and kissed passionately Daniella on the lips.

As Daniella panted with exhilaration from the experience Tom hefted one of the shafts into the air.

Daniella noticed the shaft and frowned.

Tom grimaced and waved the shaft.

Daniella sighed and parted her lips to let the shaft in.

Tom drove shaft down Daniella carefully then looked to a guard.

The guard ran forward to take the strain of the shaft.

Tom sliced Daniella's chest open, grabbed Daniella's hands, over lapped their palms then placed them carefully inside her chest.

Tom drove the shaft deeper through Daniella and impaled her hands until at last it exited via her arsehole.

Daniella strained to place one foot on top of another once she felt the shaft exit her.

Tom pat Daniella on the back by way of thanks then drove the shaft further and further through her until at last her feet were both impaled and she was lifted into the air. The shaft was driven further through her, she was turned to the horizontal and placed into the cooking mechanism of the spit roaster.

Lucy watched the whole process with horrified fascination. Then a hand squeezed hers and a familiar voice said. "Kinda of hard to look away from isn't it?"

Lisa had been bought before Tom and was having her scalp removed.

"You shouldn't be here, Riksu." said Lucy, without taking her eyes off the horror show happening before her.

"As if I was going to miss the love of my life getting roasted." said Riksu quietly. "Do you think that's what Dany wants to do to me?"

Lucy shrugged. "She'd want you to attend the celebrations. I know that much."

"Well I'm going to." said Riksu happily. "I just needed to do this first."

Lisa was lifted into the air, turned to the horizontal and placed in the cooking mechanism of the spit roaster.

Tom retrieved his rifle then took up his position by the stanchion as the perimeter deflated to allow women to approach and carve meat from what was being spit roasted.

Riksu kissed Lucy on the cheek then said. “I’ll go attend the celebrations now.”

Lucy turned from the view of Daniella and Lisa being spit roasted to look at Riksu. “Since you’re here you may as well sample her.”

Riksu was aghast. “She’s my girlfriend.”

Lucy bristled at the words but said. “And she wants you on her dinner plate. Try her.”

Riksu looked at Lucy nervously. “But she’s my Queen.”

Lucy nodded. “And every second she goes uneaten is another second she has to spend on that spit.”

Riksu stared at Lucy. “You’re serious, aren’t you?”

Lucy grimaced then strode forward through the crowd and climbed the ladder to the gantry positioned to allow for the carving off of meat from the top most spit roast, in this case Lisa.

Lucy coughed then clapped her hands. She cried out. “Geoff calls us lambs! Bad mistake!!!”

The guards looked to Tom nervously as the throng of women fell silent.

Tom shrugged.

“He likes to call us his little lambs because we are his cattle!” cried Lucy. “He looks after us and he shears us of the valuable parts of us that regrow!” Lucy scanned the crowd as she let the words sink in. “Except we aren’t just shorn of our hair! We are shorn of our flesh! We are the sacrificial lambs before the altar of capitalism and greed!”

Lucy picked up a plate and a knife then carved slices of meat off Lisa’s upper arms and calves. “Except there was another shepherd with another flock wasn’t there!? Another person whose disciples would enact their will no matter the cost!”

Lucy climbed down down the ladder with her plate and stood before Daniella, the flame of the spit roaster like a halo of orange behind her. “It’s been two thousand years and that fucker still hasn’t showed but Dany is here right now sacrificing herself for your sins!”

The women and the guards were watching Lucy with rapt attention now.

“Dany doesn’t offer you bread as a metaphor for her flesh! Nor wine as a metaphor for her blood! Dany gives of her flesh and blood willingly so you might eat!” cried Lucy. “And she is your rightful Queen! The Queen of the Free!”

Lucy turned to Daniella and stopped her rotating.

Daniella tried to look at her.

Lucy stroked her cheeks sadly. “And I love her. With all my heart, across every incarnation. I am

the champion of the sylphs and I pledge myself before you, my Queen."

Lucy kissed Daniella on the forehead then sliced off her cheeks and placed them on her plate before walking along a bit more and reaching out with a knife to remove Daniella's clitoris and place it on her plate.

Riksu was atop the gantry now. "And was Dany betrayed for thirty pieces of silver!? No!!! Her most loyal disciple gladly shares her fate because Dany is the one true Queen of the Free!"

Riksu removed Lisa's clitoris and placed it on her plate then she leapt to the floor. "Now, lets eat our goddess for her sacrifice brings us strength!"

Riksu sliced off Daniella's breasts then walked off with her plate to watch the celebrations.

Women queued up to carve up Daniella and Lisa now.

Lucy approached Tom warily as she chewed on Daniella's clitoris.

Tom smirked. "Quite the performance you pulled off there. I'm impressed."

"Do you know who I am?" asked Lucy warily. "Because I know who you are."

Tom sucked on his teeth for a moment then said. "You're the lass that acts as Dany's second in command, right? And the one who slaughters her on a regular basis?"

Lucy smirked then glared at Tom. "Oh, I am far more than that. Dany likes you, I don't know why but she does, so that means I'll tolerate you but I am not nearly as naive or gullible as she is. you make me sick."

Tom chuckled. "So mean... We've only just met."

Lucy grimaced then gritted her teeth. "She said you reaped her last night and that I should pick up the remains?"

"They're arround back." said Tom.

Lucy nodded then said acidly. "Thank you."

"Careful." said Tom with a grin. "You're starting to turn me on."

Lucy glared at Tom and pointed her index finger at him.

As Tom watched Lucy's eyes turned a vibrant shade of emerald green and he felt his lungs contract involuntarily. He couldn't breathe in and started to suffocate, his body shutting down as it was deprived of oxygen.

Lucy raised her finger and blinked, her eyes back to their usual hazel hues.

Tom panted for breath.

"Never forget that you are but a mortal man while I, Daniella, Lisa and every other woman in this facility are not." said Lucy coldly.

Tom nodded hurriedly then waved away a curious guard's concerns.

Lucy strode past Tom.

Tom overheard Lucy cry excitedly. "Cathy!"

Then he felt long manicured nails clasping the head of his penis.

Tom looked up and marshalled his senses.

Artemis had one hand down his pants and another stroking his cheek in a matter that could be mistaken for fondness. "You fucked her, didn't you?"

Tom burst laughing.

Artemis tightened her grip.

Tom stopped laughing.

Artemis glared at him. Her expression and body language looked almost flirtatious and loving. Evidently she wasn't stupid enough to pull an overt display of aggression before so many armed men.

"I did nothing wrong. I swear to you." said Tom earnestly. "It was all safe, sane and consensual. You ask her."

"She's a sylph..." said Artemis as she tightened her grip. "She is a very lovely and very sweet girl and if you asked her nicely she would let you eat her alive, as I well intend to. You took advantage of her."

Tom looked Artemis in the eyes. "And you haven't?"

Artemis swallowed and relaxed her grip a little. "I may have done but she's happy and that's all I want. My little girl to be happy, healthy and loved."

"I love her." said Tom earnestly.

Artemis tightened her grip again. "Nice try but I wasn't born yesterday. You used her and now you have to pay."

Tom groaned then put his hands on Artemis's shoulders and forced himself to look Artemis in the eyes. "Do you know why I'm Frank's right hand man?"

"Because you're a bastard." said Artemis.

Tom shook his head. "Because I have nothing to lose. I never had any morals and I have a lot of blood on my hands so there is nothing that I will not do given the right motivation because if I die, if I suffer, it doesn't fucking matter to me."

Artemis stared at Tom. "Are you serious?"

“You can do whatever the fuck you like to me but it won’t change the fact that what we did was consensual and that she fucking loved it.” said Tom earnestly. “Even if you could do what you want to do without being riddled with bullets your precious Dany will not forgive you.”

Artemis held Tom’s gaze and tightened her grip.

Tom gasped and grimaced but he maintained eye contact.

Artemis removed her hand from Tom’s pants.

Tom bent double and wheezed.

“Alright, I’ll bite for now but I will talk with Dany.” said Artemis acidly.

Tom waved Artemis goodbye.

A guard approached tom and asked. “Sir, are you alright?”

Tom chuckled. “Perkins isn’t it?”

“Hinchcliffe, actually, Sir.” said the guard apologetically.

Tom climbed his way up the guard to standing then hissed in his ear. “Very well, Hinchcliffe, if I ever see you questioning my authority and strength ever again then your daughters will be joining Dany and Lisa on the spit and you’ll be lucky if they’re turned into weresylphs first.”

“But they’re twelve and seven, Sir?” pleaded the guard.

“Then we’ll only need one shaft to roast them both.” said Tom dryly.

The guard backed away slowly. “Understood, Sir.”

Artemis climbed down the ladder with a plate full of meat as Lucy and Catherine carried a trunk between them.

“What have you got there?” asked Artemis.

Lucy looked to Tom and bit her lip.

Artemis stared at Lucy. “Should I be worried?”

Lucy was about to say something then she changed her mind and looked to Catherine.

“Well you know what Dany’s like? Frisky little thing loves attention.” said Catherine casually. “So after I established my dominance, I fucked her pretty little brains out and harvested her for parts. Sort of did it more than once because she is one persistent and annoying little girl.”

Artemis stared at Catherine and made as if to say something then she tilted her head sideways and squinted. Finally she sighed and shrugged. “I try to be a positive influence on the girl.”

Lucy looked to where Daniella was being spit roasted and carved up. She grimaced.

“Are you going to join us?” asked Catherine. “To celebrate their first batch of weapons, Lucy’s girls are going to eat someone.”

Artemis grinned as she showed off a set of pearly white teeth. “Oh, now that I cannot miss.”

Lucy flipped open the chest, revealing the tupperware containers filled with Daniella’s flesh. “Then you will just love what we’ve got for desert.”

Artemis giggled then closed the lid of the trunk. “Come on, we’ve got a show to catch.”

Lucy and Catherine lifted up the chest and started walking.

Artemis watched them walk for a moment then asked. “Are you a wereshark sylph by any chance?”

Catherine looked back with a smirk. “Why do you ask?”

“No reason.” said Artemis as she walked past them and slapped Catherine on the bum as she passed.

Chapter 21
Lesson Two

Daniella spun on the spit. The heat of the flames seared her flesh. She was quite bored now.

A dark skinned woman with long frizzy hair started carving into her butt cheeks.

Daniella rolled her eyes.

A tall, well built, ginger woman noticed the action and reached out with finger and thumb of one hand to grab hold of Daniella’s left eyelid before using a knife with her other hand to slice through the eye lid and remove it.

As Daniella watched, the tall, well built, ginger woman placed Daniella’s eyelid into her mouth, chewed and swallowed. Then she gave a smile, licked her lips and reached out again.

Daniella started to hear a guitar playing quietly.

The tall, well built, ginger woman swallowed Daniella’s other eyelid.

Daniella heard a strange female voice start to sing. “There is a man with no name and no home...”

The tall, well built, ginger woman sliced along the inside edge of Daniella’s jawline.

The strange singing continued. “He wanders the multiverse with nought but his guitar and spoons...”

The tall, well built, ginger woman pulled the flesh of her neck down, now it was no longer attached to her jaw and removed Daniella’s tongue.

Daniella stared to hear gunshots, explosions and screaming as the singing continued. “Wherever he goes disaster follows. He is the man that can destroy an entire army with a song.”

The tall, well built, ginger woman muttered. “The One True Queen Of Valhalla sends her regards.” Then she sliced off Daniella’s ears.

Daniella felt the shaft vanish from her body and ground beneath her feet as the singing concluded. “And if you can find him maybe you can procure the services of The Froody Bard.”

Daniella stood naked and whole before a short slender blonde woman with emerald green eyes wearing a bikini and a collar. There was a tall skinny guy in a miss matched suit and shades standing a few metres away with a leash hanging from clasped hands. They were in a large tent of some kind.

Daniella grinned and hugged the short woman. “Thank you.”

The short woman pat Daniella’s back. “It’s alright, Dany, we’ll look after you now.”

Daniella pulled back and looked the short woman in the eyes. “So I’ll belong to you once this night is done?”

The short woman chuckled. “If you like. I am the Unleasher. I’m sort of a pet myself.”

The man in the odd suit grunted.

“I’m sort of his future incarnation.” said the Unleasher. “It’s complicated.”

Daniella looked at the man curiously then muttered. “Kinky...”

The Unleasher smirked. “I will be your teacher on the subject of logic for the next month so before we begin is there anything you want to ask of me?”

Daniella nodded. “My owner, in the real world, Artemis, she reacted with great terror at the mention of the Farsh-nuke, I’d like to know why. I mean if the soul of every Farsh-nuke is here, including past and future incarnations, surely somebody knows?”

The Unleasher bit her lip and crossed her arms as she thought. After a moment she uncrossed her arms and grabbed Daniella by the shoulders. “Alright once this night is done, the you before me now will tell me everything she knows about this Artemis and I will have people working on finding out the answer so it might be delivered to the real Daniella when she next visits this place.”

Daniella smiled. “Thank you. I look forward to this me’s life with you.”

The Unleasher chuckled and ran a hand through Daniella’s hair.

Daniella blushed.

The tall man in the odd suit screamed as he was pulled backwards out of the tent and Lucy entered over his body carrying a strange blaster.

Lucy stared at Daniella and said mockingly. “I swear to you that no matter what reality we are on and what version of us is doing the speaking I will always do everything I can to protect you and keep you safe because I do love you.”

Daniella swallowed and whispered in the Unleasher’s ear. “Let me handle this.”

“You said those words before you removed my brain, killing me and trapping me here!” cried Lucy bitterly.

The Unleasher backed away and held her hands up in surrender. “Easy now, nobody has to get hurt.”

Lucy glared at the Unleasher and spat in her face.

Daniella said. “I meant every fucking word, Lucy. I knew I would be coming back here and I knew I would be spending eternity here, or my soul would anyway. Look around you. Riksu isn’t here. Tom isn’t here. It’s just you and me.”

Lucy shook her head and waved the gun. “This machine kills souls, kills any living being that is just logic, which is all we are here. We can go out together.”

“No!” cried the Unleasher.

Lucy pointed the gun straight at her. “I will shoot! Do not think for a second that I will not shoot!”

Daniella stared at Lucy. “You are the champion of sylphs, the heir to the Farsh-nuke, a knight of Undine and my friend! Lower the fucking gun!”

Lucy swallowed but kept her aim steady.

“Do you know who that is you’re pointing that gun at?” asked Daniella.

Lucy nodded. “She’s the Farsh-nuke’s punishment.”

Daniella shook her head. “She’s my new owner, our new owner. No more slaughter. No more spits. Just you and me at the end of her leash for all eternity.”

Lucy look to Daniella, tears in her eyes. “I love you...”

Daniella nodded. “And I love you. Just put down the gun.”

Lucy bit her lip, sighed then crouched down and placed the gun gently on the floor.

Daniella embraced Lucy and kissed her on the lips.

Lucy moaned.

Daniella started stroking Lucy. “We will talk. We will do so much talking and we will have so much fun but I need to continue my lesson so for now I need you to be a good girl and sit.”

Lucy nodded and sat down on the floor.

The Unleasher handed the gun to the man in the odd suit then turned back to Daniella and clapped her hands. “Alright so lesson one of logic is that universes are great big bubbles of logic and as sapient life forms are logical beings they have unique code associated with them that is more or less equivalent to a soul. A logic sensitive person or being such as an elder god can actually see this logic as a kind of colour aura and even read the events that have happened to that person in their

soul or rewrite it if they wish."

"And I'm guessing the logic can exist independently of a person under the right circumstances because that's what we are." said Daniella.

"Right you are." said the Unleasher. "Over the next month I intend to educate the Daniella being spit roasted on how to identify, read and edit logic. I can't teach much and of course a sufficiently skilled logistician will be able to mask their souls from detection and even put up a false front to confuse a would be snoop but it should be enough to aid in the revolution."

*

Chapter 22
A New Master

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up naked in the dark, she could feel three hearts beating peacefully beside her and heard a steady breathing. She rolled over and placed her hand against her companion's chest as her eyes adjusted to the gloom.

Lisa was sleeping peacefully.

Daniella smirked and placed her hands about Lisa's head.

Crack!

"Dream on, pretty dreamer." muttered Daniella then she hammered on the lid of the trunk with her knuckles.

There was a sound of scraping metal, the lid opened up and tiny speakers played a tune loudly.

Daniella sat up and grinned at Tom then saw him freeze and Artemis rise up behind him. "So our office had a load of new Intel PCs arrive the other day and they all made that sound thanks to a little light activated speaker mechanism in the boxes they came in. I always thought it'd come in handy some day."

Tom swallowed and put his hands up.

"Dany, darling, I think the three of us need to have a talk." said Artemis cheerily before she added darkly. "Make one false move and I'll blow his brains out."

Daniella rose slowly from the trunk. "Please don't hurt him."

"I won't." said Artemis cheerily. "A bullet to the brain is a very quick death."

Tom looked pleadingly at Daniella.

Daniella raised her hands. "Okay, we can talk but you put the gun down."

Artemis shook her head. "The man is a monster and you are so young and so naive. I can't trust you not to do something foolish."

“Then why are you giving me every reason to?” said Daniella irritably as she took a step out of the trunk. “He’s mortal, you’re not.”

Artemis’s face fell and she groaned.

Tom mouthed. “What?”

“Oh, he didn’t know? Did he?” said Daniella with a smile as she took another step out of the trunk. “Tom, it’s an acquired ability of the weresharks that we have increased sensitivities to smells and sounds. We even have a kind of electrosensitivity that lets us feel the heart beat of other living things. Artemis has three hearts. She’s a wereshark.”

Tom smiled and said. “Artemis, I like you. I know it seems daft but I always have. There is a beauty and power to you that I can respect and unlike you I am not prepared to harm someone who matters to someone I care about. So now I know you’re a wereshark you have a question to ask yourself. Do you think this is the first time someone has ever pulled a gun on me?”

“You’d still die.” said Artemis bitterly, strengthening her resolve and holding the pistol with two hands now.

“Aye.” said Tom with a nod. “I might but I know you will have to live with the consequences.”

Daniella nodded. “Call me mad, naive or subject to Stockholm Syndrome. I really don’t care. If you kill him there is no coming back from that. We are done. There are others who would take me as their pet.”

Artemis swallowed. “And if I do put down the gun? What happens then?”

“We will still talk.” said Daniella firmly.

Artemis nodded. “And what does the organ grinder think?”

Tom grimaced. “Artemis, I know my words matter for shit but for what it’s worth this was all Dany, every step of it. If she says we talk then we talk.”

Artemis groaned then handed the gun to Daniella. “Fine...”

Tom turned around and frisked Artemis for concealed weapons.

Daniella stuck the gun in the fridge then took a seat at a table. “You know we were going to have a romantic dinner of me before you arrived.”

“Oh, were you?” asked Artemis dryly.

Tom groaned. “Thanks, Dany. Really great timing there.”

Tom finished patting Artemis down and watched her awkwardly.

“Well obviously not eating me alive.” said Daniella with smirk. “Just eating up what was harvested last night.”

Artemis frowned. “I think your friends Lucy and Catherine emptied the whole fridge for the

celebrations."

Tom breathed a sigh of relief then coughed and muttered bitterly. "What a shame."

"Actually I spoke with Lucy and heard about the whole fridge situation, so I decided to fillet that ex of yours up once the main event was done and bring her over earlier." said Artemis as she headed to the fridge.

Daniella shot a nervous look at Tom. "You really didn't have to."

Tom was oblivious but chimed in anyway. "Yeah, it's honestly fine..."

Artemis removed a few tupperware boxes of meat and placed them on a nearby counter then she tossed a box onto the table and closed the fridge.

Daniella stared at the box. Inside was a long thin piece of meat and short half donut of flesh.

"I've always thought the clitoris an under appreciated culinary ingredient." said Artemis as she took pans from out of cupboards and placed them on electric hobs. "I mean yeah there's more meat to the breast and bum so it seems like the wiser move to take those for cooking but with weresylphs less is more." Artemis poured oil into the pans and started chucking in cuts of meat. "Slice off a girl's clit and she'll grow it in fifteen minutes tops. Slice off her bum or her breasts and she can't be harvested again for hours. A hundred girls being cut every fifteen minutes is much more efficient and it leaves the girls free to work while they heal."

Tom joined Daniella by the table and looked to her nervously.

"Are you saying you want my clitoris?" asked Daniella uncertainly.

Artemis whipped round to glare at Daniella. "Your clit is always appreciated, honey, and I certainly would not mind a taste right now but that is not my point."

Artemis went back to cooking the meat.

Tom examined the contents of the tupperware box.

Artemis flipped the meat over with a spatula then fetched 4 plates from a nearby cupboard. "I'm just saying that if I were in charge then things would be rather different. I mean no showers, no clothes, certainly no internet and not even proper beds."

Tom looked to Daniella and asked. "Is there any particular reason you might have a tongue and a clit on their own?"

Daniella groaned and raked her face with her hands. "I've been a fool."

"What is it?" asked Tom.

"There was this girl being eaten alive as part of a thing today and I asked for her tongue and clit as a kind of power play that she really belonged to me even though I was about to go on the spit." said Daniella with a frown.

Artemis said. "I've got your ex's tongue and clit here if you want to add them to the pan."

Daniella shrugged and rose from her chair with the tupperware box.

Artemis was plating up some of the meat as Daniella approached with the tupperware box.

Daniella was momentarily overcome by the smell of Riksu's cooked flesh and so didn't notice Artemis's knife whip between her legs until a moment later. Daniella stared at Artemis in shock.

Artemis smirked and booped Daniella on the nose. "Well, you did ask. Go harvest Lisa for me won't you? Just her tongue and clit, it'd be a shame not to take advantage of extra ingredients so near. And give her another snap of the neck while you're there. She deserves her sleep."

Daniella sighed, picked up a knife and approached the trunk.

"You seem to know an awful lot about cooking girls, were you some kind of cannibal chef recruited to aid the company?" asked Tom.

Artemis sighed and focused on cooking.

Daniella returned with Lisa's tongue and clitoris. "I'd quite like to know the answer to his question actually."

Artemis turned from the hob, pulled Daniella close and kissed her on the forehead. "Honey, you're my girl, you don't need to know these things. The burdens of my past are not yours to bare."

Daniella nodded and grabbed Artemis by the shoulders so she could look her in the eyes. "I know I'm your pet and I know you love me but you just put a gun against my boyfriend's head so I think I deserve some answers, don't you?"

Artemis held Daniella's gaze for a moment then she nodded and pulled the gun she'd retrieved from the fridge out of her back pocket and placed it on the counter. "I knew a man once, a good man, who never used guns but he isn't here and he hasn't been in my life for a long time. Just keep the gun on you."

"How?" asked Daniella as she gestured to her lack of clothes.

Artemis sighed. "And they call you Queen of the Free..." Then she picked up a knife, sliced Daniella's chest open and forced the gun into the cavity before the wound closed.

Daniella glared at Artemis and said pointedly. "I certainly didn't ask for that."

Artemis smirked and turned back to her cooking.

Daniella took a seat at the table opposite Tom and asked. "Why are there legends about you? Bad ones?"

Tom shrugged. "This life, this line of work, is the best thing that's ever happened to me so I'm enthusiastic about it. Passionate even. Being passionate about butchering women understandably leads to a rather monstrous reputation. Combine that with the mistakes of early inexperience causing the slaughtered to react badly and rumours build."

Daniella groaned. "Right."

“What about the rumours that you fucked a dog?” asked Artemis pointedly.

“You what!?” cried Artemis.

“I started seeing a girl in this place who started to gain control of her abilities. She could become a wolf. We were sneaking around and stuff, with me pretending she was my dog so I could get her alone at which point she’d transform and we’d fuck.” said Tom irritably. “One guard saw me take my dog into my room, heard the sounds of fucking and my girl had nowhere to hide so she went back to wolf mode.”

“A likely story.” said Artemis as she placed plates of fried meat before Tom and Daniella then took a seat herself beside Daniella.

Daniella smelled the meat and dug into it with her fingers eagerly. “This is glorious...” said Daniella between mouthfuls

Tom stared at the meat nervously. “I, er - I think I need to get a knife and fork. Maybe some salt? Something to drink as well.”

“I’ll get it.” said Artemis as she rose from the table.

“Of course.” said Tom awkwardly as he looked at Daniella like she was a life raft and he was drowning.

Daniella was lost in bliss as she ate the meat. “You should really try this, it is so good. We are going to have to eat Riksu together at some point.”

Tom stared at Daniella.

Daniella froze, mid chew, finished her food and said. “Well obviously we’d fuck her first.”

Tom groaned and raked his face then leaned on the table with his elbows and said. “So I can add cannibalism to my long list of sins. Yippee.”

Artemis handed Daniella a kitchen roll and said. “Actually you’re a human so eating weresylph isn’t cannibalism. Daniella and I though, we are cannibals.”

Daniella wiped her face with a sheet of tissue paper from the kitchen roll.

Tom smiled awkwardly as cutlery and condiments were placed on the table.

Artemis then pulled up a chair beside Tom and placed the naked unconscious Lisa on it.

Daniella chuckled. “Oh you are in for a treat.”

Tom looked at Lisa and grimaced. “Umm...”

Artemis tore a vein open on Lisa’s neck, inserted a straw and said. “Bon appetite.”

“Go on, drink her.” said Daniella with a grin on her face.

Tom chuckled. “No. No, I call bullshit. This must be some kind of test. One moment you’re holding a gun to my head, the next you’re cooking up her friends and feeding them to me and now you’re asking me to drink her best friend.”

“Well Lisa’s not doing anything with her blood right now is she?” said Artemis dismissively as she took her seat beside Daniella again. “And besides she’s not Dany’s best friend, she’s her pet. That is a small but crucial difference and one Dany knows very well. You must be mad if you think I’ve never drunk Dany before.”

Daniella sighed and leaned forward with her elbows on the table. “I think you need to know why I am willing to overlook your past Tom.”

“I’m listening.” said Tom, grateful of the excuse to put off eating or drinking.

“This is going to be interesting.” said Artemis as she put some fried meat into her mouth.

“A lot of morality systems put weight on context and motive and for kind of good reasons you know.” said Daniella carefully. “Cases of self defence and revenge for grotesque suffering generally being weighted better than actions performed out of lust or greed or some other base desire. Victims get away with murder, thieves and rapists get prison. I mean they don’t because our justice system is fucked but that’s what the majority of people think, right?”

“And under such morality I deserve death, right?” said Tom with a sigh.

Artemis smiled. “Oh, boy, death’s too good for you.

Daniella glared at Artemis. “Except the world doesn’t operate on emotions. It operates on reason and logic and that must extend to morality. The needs of the many outweigh the needs of the few and all that Star Trek shit.”

Daniella looked to Tom and squeezed his hands. “Rehabilitation is always better than revenge. I know you have done wrong, a lot of unforgivable wrong but it has stopped and as long as it stays stopped I want you. I think that in many ways I could be worse than you for the things I plan to do. So I need to believe that you can change and you can be forgiven or the only way this is ever going to end is with my death.”

Tom swallowed and looked into Daniella’s eyes. “You are not and never will be worse than me.”

Artemis ran a hand through Daniella’s hair and stroked her arm. “Oh, honey, you’re wonderful. You will never be as bad as that... Thing.”

Daniella shook her heard and felt tears start to form in her eyes. “Tom’s monstrousness is in the past. His only ongoing crime’s being part of an oppressive system for money and half the human race is guilty of that. I, on the other hand, am going to be a monster on the level with Napoleon or Julius Caesar.”

Daniella stared at Artemis. “If he deserves to die for what he has done then I sure as shit deserve to die for what I am going to do. Every man and woman on this island and any else who oppose us will die because of me.”

Tom shook his head. “They deserve to die if they oppose you. You aren’t some tinpot dictator and you aren’t no Queen. You’re a suffering angel who is in a position to lead a fightback.”

Artemis nodded. “He’s right. Napoleon and Caesar had themselves crowned because they wanted power. You have power and you are using it responsibly for a worthy cause. Trust me, honey, I know revolutions very well and it is never the fault of the revolutionaries for reaching breaking point, always the fault of the oppressors for handling the situation poorly.”

Daniella nodded and took a few deep breaths to compose herself then she said. “Thank you but this isn’t about my feelings. This is bald fact. I am going to kill people. I am going to make people suffer. All Tom’s sins are in the past. He can never be forgiven but he can change, I have to believe that. And I like him, he makes me feel like a girl again, not a pet, or a Queen, or a cannibal, but a normal human girl.”

Tom smiled sadly. “Well, I like you too, Dany.”

Artemis sighed, kissed Daniella on the forehead then said. “Well, if you really feel that way, I guess I can let him live. Just be careful with him. You’re a very sweet and pretty girl and men like him eat girls like that for breakfast. Sometimes literally.”

“Which is exactly what I like about him.” said Daniella with a smirk and a wink. “There is something reassuringly simple about his desire to dominate and fuck me.”

Tom smirked and looked at his plate. “I suppose I better give this ex of yours a try then? I mean if I am to be expected to have you for breakfast?”

Artemis grinned. “Perhaps her clit after you’ve sufficiently stimulated it?”

Daniella stared at Artemis.

Tom snorted, cut off a slice of fried meat, dipped it in ketchup, placed it in his mouth, chewed it and swallowed. “Lovely.”

Artemis smirked. “I know you were bluffing by the way and if I really wanted to I could have pulled the gun from Daniella’s chest and shot you.”

Daniella glared at Artemis. “Careful. We were finally at peace.”

Tom smiled. “It’s okay, she can think I was bluffing if she wants.” He took a sip from the straw in Lisa’s neck then stopped hurriedly. “Oh, sweet Jesus, that’s good.”

Artemis chuckled. “Yeah, Lisa’s a very tasty one. Of course, you should have tried Sammy. I came when I first drank her, and then I was lucky enough to eat her alive for a client and I swear it is not possible to have much more bliss while remaining conscious and aware.”

Daniella studied Artemis curiously. “What happened to you? You don’t seem to make sense at times.”

Artemis sighed. “You don’t want to know.”

Daniella said. “I really think I do. You mentioned a good man? What happened to him? How did you get here?”

Artemis shrugged and stared into the distance. “He died. The good man died. Quite a few times in

fact and then one day he stayed dead and the man I had been travelling with after him was the one to make him that way. And then I met a woman called the Bam-Kursh and I struck her a deal, resurrect that first good man in return for me as her legal property."

Daniella stared at her. "Legal property?"

Artemis nodded. "It's what I plan to do with you eventually."

"Really?" asked Daniella uncertainly. "I thought this pet thing was more an off the record bdsm thing?"

Artemis smirked and put an arm round Daniella's shoulders then squeezed her tight. "Oh, it's legal, or at least it is out there. The Bam-Kursh took complete legal ownership of me and my image across all the multiverse, or at least so far as the law applied. I was cloned using a kind of teleporter, some of me were turned into things called toy girls and sold in shops as expensive executive toys. Some of me were turned into sylphs and sold as pets and some of me - Some of me were turned into weresylphs and sold as food for aliens. I was three hundred years old by the time the me you are talking to was created."

Daniella stared at Artemis. "That's counting the clones, right?"

"Oh god no." said Artemis. "That good man I mentioned. He was a time traveller from a race of time travellers, our travels weren't always safe. One day I died but he bought me back with a catch, I was now immortal. Actually why I stopped travelling with him. The dead are kind of supposed to stay dead."

"Right..." said Daniella, a little lost.

"Anyway the Bam-Kursh fixed all that weirdness, it's complicated." said Artemis. "So this me stepped out of the cloning booth, feeling as fresh as the immortal 300 year old me that first entered it. And then the Bam-Kursh put a hood over my head and turned me into a wereshark sylph. She explained about the imprinting and said that there was a war going on, a war that all the mes were being sold to finance but that I would be far more than just another item of stock."

"What did she mean?" asked Daniella.

"There was a race called the Contravoxai. A tube of tentacles, topped by 5 rows of eyeballs on stalks, the legs of a tarantula and massive gaping jaws leading into enough acid to dissolve a man and they could fly courtesy of little bat like things that flapped out of their stomachs." said Artemis. "Useful allies to have in war, especially given they were a practically post scarcity society capable of planet hopping and travelling between universes. They just had the one minor flaw of a culture based on eating a sapient human like race called the Vligury and raiding parallel Earths for humans when the Vligury were too slow to reproduce."

"Shit." said Daniella.

"Oh, don't worry, there was a revolution and as a result the Contravoxai I was with turned their humans and Vligury into wereshark sylphs first so they could survive and like being eaten. Plus everybody got a chance to turn down being eaten. It was weirdly consensual." said Artemis.

"But you were sold to them?" said Daniella incredulously. "You got no choice."

Artemis shook her head. “I was given to a rather pub landlord called Eliza on the understanding that I wouldn’t need to be forced into anything because I would imprint upon her, get curious, fulfil an order and start working for tips and kicks like the rest of them. It was to sweeten the Bam-Kursh’s relationship with the Contravoxai and ensure their loyalty.”

Daniella struggled to understand what Artemis meant. “So you were a sex worker?”

Artemis chuckled. “God, no. I was a filthy pink skinned humanoid. Only the most perverted and degenerate Contravoxai got a sexual thrill out of us. This wasn’t some leisure or entertainment establishment. This was a gastropub where I and the other ladies and gents were the starters, mains, sides, drinks and desserts. The fact that we as sylphs found the experience immensely pleasurable and stimulating doesn’t change the fact that there was nothing remotely sexual for the customers about eating us.”

Daniella shuddered. “Sounds horrible.”

Artemis laughed. “Oh, you would have loved it. And they would have loved you.”

“How long were you there for?” asked Daniella.

“Five hundred years.” said Artemis. “Five hundred fantastic years of bliss and then the Bam-Kursh called in her good will with the Contravoxai and the ship I was on was ordered into the front lines. We survived and we did our duty but we had a lot of casualties. Sammy, Lisa, the Lucys, even our landlords.”

“You lost your owner?” said Daniella, taken aback. “I’m so sorry.”

Artemis nodded. “War is hell but we tried to rebuild, to help get the Contravoxai back in fighting shape. Weresylphs can recover their numbers a lot quicker than Contravoxai can but even the Vligury and weresylph populations were severely dented. I was ordered out on raiding missions to replenish numbers. It’s where I learned to fight. Then one day I met a man who looked exactly like the good man I’d left so long ago. We tried to be humane in our raids, never take only children, never take advantage of the weak or take those important to society but it was still horrible and when I saw that man reacting in terror it hit me hard. It felt like despite doing this all for him I’d let him down. And that’s when the people who run this place found me.”

“You were patient zero?” asked Daniella. “The first weresylph? That’s how you know the Queen of Valhalla? That’s how you trained Jake to be so good?”

Artemis shrugged. “I did what I had to do. They said they would help the Contravoxai if I volunteered and that they’d look after me and to be fair they have kept their word.” Artemis looked to Daniella and ran a hand through her hair. “They let me have you. I mean okay they put you on a spit but you’re still mine, my precious precious girl.”

Daniella smiled. “Well I’m glad I met you. Whatever else, I am glad I met you.”

Artemis hugged Daniella and gave her a kiss on the forehead. “I’m sorry for over reacting about Tom but you are the best thing in my life and I don’t want you to get hurt.”

Daniella said. “It’s okay, I understand but I do genuinely like him.”

“And that’s fine.” said Artemis as she stroked her.

Daniella asked. “Do you know if there’s a way to find or contact the Contravoxai?”

“There may be, why?” asked Artemis.

“Because if you spent 500 years with them, maybe I want to as well.” said Daniella curiously.

Artemis chuckled. “Alright, I’ll look into it. Though you haven’t had the pleasure of residing on my dinner plate yet.”

Daniella giggled. “Once I’m off the spit we’ll sort something out, okay?”

Artemis nodded. “Just so. We need time to properly savour the experience.”

“Umm, did I miss something?” asked a familiar voice.

Artemis and Daniella turned their attentions to where Tom was awkwardly staring at Lisa as he had his lips about the straw in her neck.

Tom removed the straw from his mouth and smiled in what he hoped was a charming fashion. “Umm, hi. Artemis insisted I try you.”

“Right...” said Lisa as she looked to Artemis.

Artemis chuckled.

Daniella looked Lisa in the eyes and said. “Lisa, this is my fault. I can never bare to wake you because you’re just so sweet -”

“Oh, don’t be ridiculous, Honey.” said Artemis dismissively. “You’re my pet, this is on me. I want Tom to understand the value of sylph meat and blood so he’ll be able to eat you when the time comes. I just thought that since your dear little Lisa was unconscious she wouldn’t miss a little blood.”

Tom groaned and buried his face in his hands. “I’m a vampire. I’m a creepy bestial vampire. Fuck.”

Lisa rubbed Tom’s arm compassionately. “You’re not a vampire. You thought you had permission. Not your fault.”

“Actually consent is specific, conditional and needs to be continuously reasserted enthusiastically so-” began Daniella,

Lisa glared at her.

“Not helping.” said Daniella awkwardly. “Sorry.”

Artemis chuckled. “Actually by drinking the blood of a sylph you kind of are a vampire. The blood of a sylph carries a small amount of regenerative and anti-ageing power with it when drunk, even a certain amount of the submissiveness of a sylph. So you can live forever without ageing so long as you keep drinking sylph blood. When I was with the Contravoxai, there were actually bags Vligury would put weresylphs in to make drinking them past the point of consciousness practical. I might see if I can knock one up for you to carry Dany in.”

Daniella smirked.

Tom stared at Daniella.

Lisa was sat in her chair with her arms crossed moodily.

Artemis leaned over the table and reached out to stroke Lisa's cheek. "Look, I'm sorry, Lisa, but I can make everything better. Now if you'll just lean forward a little, darling."

"Don't snap her neck." said Daniella bitterly.

Artemis sighed and rose from her chair to walk around the table to Lisa.

Lisa said irritably. "Dany is my Queen and I am hers to do with as she wishes. I can forgive this but I am not yours to give away, Artemis."

"I know..." said Artemis as she laid her hands on Lisa's shoulders. "Now be a good little girl and look right ahead. It'll be over soon."

Daniella and Tom glared at each other.

"Or how about you take me walkies into the mead hall and I let you command me?" said Lisa decisively.

Artemis chuckled nervously. "What?"

Lisa placed her hands over Artemis's. "You are my keeper's keeper. You're a smart cookie. Now look at your girl. Really look."

So Artemis looked.

Daniella sat naked with her arms crossed mentally undressing Tom.

Tom had the look of someone caught masturbating, flustered, nervous and unwilling to look at yet unable to keep his eyes away from Daniella.

"Oh..." said Artemis.

Lisa nodded. "Mistress?"

"Walkies..." said Artemis as she slapped a collar round Lisa's neck and secured a leash to it.

Lisa rose from the chair and walked out of the kitchen with Artemis.

Daniella looked at Tom's plate and smirked. "You cleaned your plate."

Tom smirked and laid his hand on the table. "Well, your girlfriend is very tasty."

Daniella licked her lips. "You'd love her. We could eat her together."

"I'd rather eat you." said Tom as he licked his lips.

Daniella blushed and smiled.

“Has your clit healed?” asked Tom.

Daniella nodded and grinned.

“So do I take it I have your specific, conditional and oh so enthusiastic consent?” asked Tom with a toothy grin

“You know it.” said Daniella with a smirk as she climbed onto the table.

Tom chuckled and rose from his chair. He started undoing his belt as he circled the table.

Daniella was on all fours on the table and wiggled her bum suggestively.

Tom paused at the table with his erect cock out. “I’m sorry, I am going to need clarification on the consent here. Gun to my head and all that.”

“Yes!” cried Daniella with a chuckle. “Fuck me!”

“See I’m not sure that would hold up in court.” said Tom dryly. “I mean ‘Fuck me.’ is also a pejorative colloquial term for an unfortunate turn of events and I really really do not want this to be an unfortunate turn of events for you.”

Daniella grimaced. “Fine. I’ll be more specific. Would you kindly penetrate my vulva with your penis, stimulate my clitoris and demean me verbally with name calling so I may feel dominated and at your mercy in a safe, sane, consensual way until I achieve orgasm?”

Tom chuckled. “Well now I have no choice.”

Daniella bit her lip and groaned.

“But if my Queen demands it.” said Tom as he entered Daniella.

Daniela gasped. “Thank you.”

Tom grabbed hold of Daniella’s ribs and started thrusting. “You are my filthy little bitch, aren’t you?”

Daniella cried. “Yes!”

*

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella found Lucy sitting on a table with her feet on a bench, carving a femur with a shark tooth. She was fully dressed but Rachel lay naked on the table beside her sleeping. Hai and Hotaru each wore collars and simple leather jerkins and skirts and were focused on processing the day’s harvest on the bench on the opposite side of the table.

“Have fun with Tom?” asked Lucy without looking up.

Daniella smiled wistfully. “He rode me hard but I loved it.”

Lucy looked up at Daniella and noticed that, yes, she was naked.

Daniella hardened her tone and glared at Lucy. “Did you know Artemis would pull a gun on Tom?”

Lucy frowned. “I did not expect a gun, no.”

“But you did expect something?” asked Daniella, within arm’s reach of Lucy now.

“Well yeah, I’ve seen his soul.” said Lucy dryly. “Seen hers too so I know she has high enough clearance to know something of what he’s capable of and mothers are rather protective of their babies.”

Daniella was taken aback. “I’m not her baby and she is not my mother.”

Lucy glared at Daniella. “She is 800 years old, has travelled with three different elder beings and witnessed the end of two different reality threatening wars. You are a 22 year old student feminist and newly turned sylph. Trust me you’re a baby to her.”

Daniella frowned. “But the way she looks at me? The way she touches me?”

Lucy shrugged. “Five hundred years in a Contravoxai Gastropub. She knows how to treat freshly turned sylphs.”

Daniella stared at Lucy. “And how is that exactly?”

Lucy set aside the femur and tooth then stepped down off the bench to stand before Daniella. “The first thing to understand about sylphs is that they want to be dominated and controlled. It is quite literally what they’re designed for. The second thing to understand about sylphs is the temperament of the host species. Humans are second way so they can dominate or be dominated, you like being dominated so that puts your human score at a 2.5 but you’re also a wereshark. Weresharks are a solid first way so they really don’t like being dominated and need to dominate themselves, hence your desires for Riksu. Since there are two host species we take the lesser score away from the higher score which leaves you at a 1.5 or a particular strong willed and dominant person.”

“Right...” said Daniella as she tried to follow what Lucy said.

“The upshot of which is that you want to be dominated and to submit but you need to be convinced.” said Lucy, as she placed the palm of her left hand in the small of Daniella’s back and cleared the hair from Daniella’s face with her right hand. “After all a particularly dominant human is still just a human capable of being particularly submissive.”

Daniella smiled.

Lucy stroked Daniella’s cheek with her right hand then kissed her on the forehead. “Now bark for me.”

Daniella barked.

A devilish grin spread over Lucy’s face and she ran a hand through Daniella’s hair. “And you are a very adorable sylph. Any sapient being would love to have you as their pet.”

Daniella blushed and stared into Lucy's emerald green eyes.

Lucy licked her lips and stroked Daniella.

Daniella grinned

The moment held for a few seconds as Lucy stroked Daniella and Daniella obediently awaited further command then Lucy frowned, stepped back from Daniella and said. "So that's why she does it, the sexual tension is just a way to let you embrace your sylph instincts."

Daniella blinked and shook her head then she looked warily at Lucy. "You could have asked anything of me and I'd have accepted."

"I know." said Lucy pointedly. "It's why you make such a good pet but I wouldn't want to until you'd been properly tamed."

Daniella frowned. "You make me sound like an animal in the process of being domesticated?"

Lucy nodded. "How am I wrong?"

Daniella swallowed then said. "Actually that reminds me, Tom fucked a woman that can become a wolf."

"Yes, you." said Lucy with a smirk.

Daniella glared at Lucy. "I mean there is someone who can be turned into a wolf on command."

Lucy frowned and sat on the bench behind her. "I've seen into his soul. I know he's lying to you. I know he's done things that would get him put away for life, if not executed, but I also know that he would never hurt you unless he thought you wanted it and that he would do anything to protect you and those you care about."

Daniella frowned and sat beside Lucy on the bench. "I'm not quite sure how to take that."

Lucy nodded. "Well you've been to my after life. You've spoken to the Great Farsh-nuke. You know the blood that is on me by proxy. What does that make you think of me?"

Daniella shrugged. "I mean you're still Lucy, what you did, what a version of you might have done doesn't alter that."

"Then you don't need to know what I know about Tom." said Lucy pointedly. "He loves you and he can make you happy in this hell hole, that's really all that matters, and you are going to want some monsters on your side when the revolution comes."

Daniella nodded, lost in thought.

"And this is for you." said Lucy as she picked up the femur from the table and presented it to Daniella.

Daniella stared at the bone. "Is this some kind of a joke? Do you want me to play fetch?"

Lucy smirked. “No. Look, I’ve cut off the lower extremity off and I’m currently whittling it down to a fine cutting edge. Then I just need to bind some leather under the upper extremity to form as handle and you’ve got yourself a dagger.”

“Oh...” said Daniella as she examined the femur with renewed interest. “You actually listened to me then?”

Lucy nodded. “Hai and Hotaru have said they’ll work on the whip since they’re basically in charge of tanning but the nothingness alone knows when they’ll be done. The skull caused a bit of difficulty since it required Rachel to have her head removed before it could be processed and left to soak in vinegar. Fortunately one of our soldiers remembered a bit of Egyptian lore surrounding the mummification process of Pharaohs and so work is under way on thinning out an ulna for use in liquifying the brain so it might be removed. And of course I should have the two daggers ready by the time you’re off the spit for good.”

Daniella grimaced. “I didn’t exactly think through the grizzly details of my request did I?”

“On the contrary, now I’ve had time to think about your request, I think it makes perfect sense.” said Lucy with a smile. “By sacrificing herself, by being sacrificed for the group, Rachel risked becoming a figure for dissidents to rally behind. You may have been on the spit so you could gain a valuable ally and important resources but humans are fickle and only notice that which they see. To them you could be an absentee landlord while Rachel was here giving herself up for their delight. So you claim her head as a prize, her bones as weapons and her speech and sexual pleasure for your own. Rachel is now yours. The risk to your power crushed.”

Daniella shook her head. “Rachel is a person who did a very noble and selfless deed, one which only serves to help me.”

Lucy nodded. “And it is always those closes to us who are turned against us. You may see us as Augustus and Agrippa but they may see you as a Caesar in need of a Brutus or a Jesus in need of a Judas.”

A chill ran down Daniella’s spine. “Who was she? Before this place I mean.”

“A teaching assistant.” said Lucy casually. “25 years old, raped a couple of times, one abusive ex, estranged father and her mother still thinks she’s a straight girl who’ll settle down and have kids when she finds the right man.”

Daniella stared at her.

“And that’s just what she told me.” said Lucy as she looked into the distance.

Lucy sighed and raked her face. “I almost wish I didn’t have these memories, have these abilities. I know how tough its going to be and the things that are going to need doing.”

“Such as?” asked Daniella.

“You need to take her.” said Lucy seriously “She’s a promising teacher and a girl like that, someone will definitely love her. She could start again, find love, start a family. Only it’ll be tough, very tough and it’s going to be tough enough getting out of here in the first place. There is no happy ending for her when this is over, only hard work and isolation but I saw the way she responded to you earlier. You don’t have the voice, there was no logic rewriting her when you spoke but she

obeyed as if there was because she wants to be commanded and taken care of."

Daniella thought for a long moment then said. "What are you saying, Lucy? What are you actually asking me to do to this poor woman?"

Lucy turned her head and looked Daniella in the eyes. "Take her and make her yours. Do as I showed you and tame her. Help her forget about her past and about our shitty present. Let her life fade away as you become her world. Take her as your pet and welcome her into your family when this is over."

Daniella was aghast. "I don't even know her."

Lucy shook her head then stared right into Daniella's soul. "You know exactly who Rachel is. You know what she should be. The sweet little girl who'll volunteer to get eaten alive for the enjoyment of others. That is who Rachel needs to be. That is the healthiest thing for her.

Daniella swallowed.

That sat in silence for a couple of minutes as each stared into the middle distance then Lucy said. "So do you want me to do something about the gun in your chest and the thing in your heart?"

Daniella grimaced. "Can you maybe not do that? It's creepy. It's like you're reading my thoughts."

Lucy frowned. "Sorry, I can't stand awkward silences and it's kind of hard not to read it."

Daniella nodded. "Fair enough, just pretend you don't know then. It stops me feeling so creeped out."

Lucy nodded. "If that is what my Queen desires."

Another moment of silence passed.

Daniella looked sheepishly at Lucy. "Could you get them out though? Like would you?"

Lucy nodded. "If my Queen wills it."

Daniella smiled awkwardly. "Well I do will it."

Lucy turned on the bench, reached over the table, picked up a knife, returned to her prior position, sliced Daniella's chest open and pulled out the gun. Then she made a different incision, pulled out one of Daniella's hearts without severing the blood vessels, sliced it open and removed the contents.

Daniella panted heavily.

Lucy set aside the object she'd pulled out of Daniella's heart and the gun then placed Daniella's heart back in her body and smoothed down the flaps of skin surrounding the incisions.

Daniella breathed a sigh of relief and glared at Lucy.

Lucy gave half a smile. "All better now."

Daniella stuck out her tongue.

“You know those are very good in sandwiches, particularly if you stuff them with cheese.” said Lucy, then she picked up what she’d removed from Daniella’s heart. She removed the plastic packaging and uncoiled what was revealed to be a roll up keyboard for the smart watch.

Daniella stared at the keyboard. “Do you think he’s going to give us the pieces for a full computer piece by piece?”

Lucy shrugged. “I can tell you what has happened, not the future.”

Daniella smirked. “The superpower of hindsight, if only you had a time machine.”

Lucy burst out with hysterical laughter.

“Oh come on, it wasn’t that funny.” said Daniella.

Rachel stirred on the table and said. “Timmy, Miss Pitt just needs to grab some shut eye okay.”

Lucy froze.

Daniella glared at Lucy and hissed. “You woke her...”

Lucy hung her head in shame.

Daniella leapt up onto the table and straddled Rachel. She blew lightly on Rachel’s face.

Rachel opened her eyes then gasped. “My Queen?”

“Dany, please.” said Daniella as she rolled to one side to lie beside Rachel. “Sorry to disturb your sleep.”

Rachel was gabbling. “It is I who should apologise -”

Daniella placed her index finger against Rachel’s lips and silenced her. “You did a noble thing today, Rachel, and that makes us equals as far as I am concerned.”

Rachel nodded and seemed to calm in in an instant.

Daniella removed her index finger from Rachel’s lips.

Rachel said much more calmly. “I would gladly do that again every day of eternity. It was wonderful. Truly truly wonderful.”

Daniella grimaced. “You don’t have to bullshit me, Rachel, you are allowed to say if you did not enjoy the experience.”

“Oh but I did.” said Rachel, a warm genuine smile on her face. “It was so warm, and my nerves lit up with joy as I cooked and then waves of pleasure rolled over me as I felt myself skinned and carved. Then as I saw them eat me and the way their faces lit up with delight, I felt such overwhelming pride. I did this – Me. - I bought them that pleasure. They started cheering my name. Rache., Rachel. Then my feet and hands were removed and someone placed an apple in my mouth and encouraged me to bite down. I did as I was bid and they started talking. As my ribs were broken

up and served among the soldiers I heard one of them mention long pig and the phrase seemed to spread. When at last my body was picked clean save for the hearts and brain I heard them chant again but this time the chant went ‘Rachel The Long Pig’.”

“And then?” asked Daniella.

Rachel shrugged.

Lucy coughed.

Daniella looked to where Lucy sat on the table beside Rachel.

Lucy said. “After that we snapped your neck and removed your head. What what left of your body was processed and your hearts left here to recover.”

Rachel smiled and looked to Daniella. “Do you think they’ll have much use for long pig once we leave here?”

Lucy looked pointedly at Daniella.

Daniella frowned. “Well, even if they don’t, I promise I and my friends will visit often to dine on you. You are not alone any more. You have family now, Rachel, and we love you. You will return home and you will help those kids again.”

Lucy bit her lip and looked away.

“Now I think that you could do with a proper harvesting, Rachel.” said Daniella with a smile. “Since you are clearly so very much healed.”

Rachel grinned. “Oh to be harvested by the Queen herself. This is an honour indeed.”

Daniella looked to Lucy. “Then afterwards me and my knight here have some business to attend to before I harvest her as well.”

Lucy blushed and nodded.

“Excellent.” said Daniella as she rolled onto all fours and grabbed a knife. “Lets get started then.”

*

August the 31st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella arrived back at the kitchen to find Artemis and Tom sat opposite each other at the table eating fried meat. She hung back and listened for a moment.

“You think she’ll really like that?” asked Tom as he shovelled a fork of food into his mouth.

Artemis nodded. “I know girls like Dany. They grow up so privileged, the whole world at their feet and sure they’ve faced hardships like anyone does but they think they’re defiant victims, not members of the fortunate few. If you do this, she’ll love you forever.”

“And why are you telling me this?” asked Tom suspiciously. “I mean you put a gun to my head and nearly tore my cock off?”

“Because she needs you.” said Artemis with a sigh. “She won’t admit it but she does. Her whole life she has lived in fear of the big bad man and now here she is, legitimately a victim of them for the first time in her life, and she has no one to represent the danger she has obsessed over being actualized. No one except you.”

“So you want to help me be with Dany because I am the physical manifestation of her worst fears?” asked Tom with a frown.

Artemis shook her head and chewed on a mouthful of food thoughtfully. “This... situation... It’s tough. Very tough. I’m doing my best to help her, in my own damaged ways, but she is going to face the torment of her own demons. So if a man, a known monster at that, is actually beating her, binding her, penetrating her and eating her - entirely consensually of course - then that will be far better for her mental health than some nebulous system of oppression grinding her down. You are the demon she can fight, fuck and try to understand. Far better that than the torment of monotonous slaughter.”

Tom shuddered. “And how many girls did you... Help?”

“Far too many.” said Artemis bitterly. “But they were all happy in the end.” Artemis sighed. “Except of course, in a way that’s worse.”

Daniella swallowed and entered the room.

Tom noticed Daniella then stared at Artemis.

“How much did you hear?” asked Artemis.

Daniella shrugged. “Enough to know I shouldn’t have been listening.”

“Take a seat.” said Artemis as she pulled back the chair beside her.

Daniella sat in the chair as Artemis indicated.

“You know the Bam-Kursh can lock away memories.” said Artemis as she put her arm round Daniella’s shoulders. “It’s how she makes the toy girls. She locks away most of their memories so they only remember the taming.”

“Is that how you’re going to take away my memory of what I overheard?” asked Daniella.

Artemis shook her head then started stroking Daniella’s cheek. “But I am taming you and that is the real power of the elder gods, the way they can make you want to obey them. They made me and so many others into pets, toys and willing appetisers. Legend says that one Bam-Kursh even managed to tame a woman into complete brainless obedience.”

“You’re not going to do that to me are you?” asked Daniella nervously as she stared into Artemis’s eyes.

“No...” said Artemis with a smirk. “But you are my pet and I do intend that you will join me in the Contravoxai gastropub.”

Daniella swallowed.

“And if the Bam-Kursh ever asks, I think she could make a fine toy out of you.” said Artemis happily

Daniella blushed and frowned.

Artemis ran a hand through Daniella’s hair. “It’s alright. Nothing is going to happen until we get out of here.”

Tom coughed.

Artemis shot him a look that was pure fury and disgust.

Daniella felt small and couldn’t quite think straight but one thing did occur to her. “Where’s Lisa?”

Artemis sighed.

Tom said. “We ate her.”

Daniella stared at him.

Tom shrugged. “Well we reaped her first.”

Daniella’s mind felt like a very slow and intricate clockwork thing now as she could almost feel an idea clunk into place. “You’re going to reap me aren’t you? That’s why Artemis is here? To teach you?”

Tom nodded.

Artemis grimaced then looked to Daniella. “Yes, Honey, you deserve a man who can reap you right. If he can’t then he must be taught.”

Daniella looked at Artemis oddly for a moment then said. “Lucy said you see me as her baby but I don’t think that makes sense. Like romantic partners and friends can have odd power dynamics and do the things we do but I don’t think you could do those things if I was your baby.”

Artemis was momentarily thrown by what Daniella said but she recovered quickly. “I think Lucy is more right that you realise. A sylph/owner relationship isn’t like any relationship in conventional society. You belong to me and you are my baby and I do love you but equally I understand that you are a sexual being and need those desires satisfied. Now come on, climb onto the table so we can begin.”

Daniella sighed and climbed onto the table.

Tom said. “Let me know if anything doesn’t feel good okay, Honey?”

Daniella nodded. “Lets do this.”

*

??????-??????

Darkness.

Numbness.

Silence.

Daniella felt nothing. Nothing at all.

Then she came...

At first there was just a growing warmth beside her and the darkness took on lighter hues. Then she spoke. “You are safe and you will survive all of this, I promise you.”

The voice was like honey and bought to mind memories of her mother bringing her chicken soup when some bug would bring her low.

“Who are you?” asked Daniella.

“My name will mean nothing to you but I can show you what I am, what I can do, if you wish.” said the voice reassuringly.

Daniella recoiled. “If your name means nothing to me, tell me how I should refer to you and why you have any interest in me.”

Daniella seemed to sense a pique of happiness from the presence behind her and there was a pause before the voice replied carefully. “Very well, you may call me Kate. I am - Shall we say associated? - With the beings known as the Farsh-nuke and the Bam-Kursh. You have attracted the attention of the devil thought dead and all the gods are curious of your power. I wish to protect you.”

“Why?” asked Daniella pointedly.

The warmth beside Daniella seemed to chill, like cold water poured into a hot bath and the voice refused to speak for a moment.

Daniella cackled. “Oh Kate, or whatever the fuck you are, you really should not have shown your hand so readily. I am not quite the helpless victim I may appear and now I know what you want I will use it to bring you to heel.”

The warmth returned rapidly and the brightening dark soon lifted to reveal the florescent green of the multiverse. Daniella was floating, fully clothed in her suit, before its majesty. She gasped. “It’s beautiful.”

“The multiverse has a pantheon of 7 elder gods...” came the voice again. “Pacifis Subis, Galla Placidia, Gfaxxy Quluwmcy, Viorum Kaztif-Tan, The Farsh-nuke, the Bam-Kursh and Spring-Heeled Jack.”

“And they rule over this?” asked Daniella.

The voice sounded disappointed. “They pillage it. The multiverse is a living, growing thing, the largest and most complex lifeform in all reality. The elder gods were just steps along its evolutionary path but they act as if they should rule it because they came first.”

Daniella snorted bitterly. “Well they wouldn’t be the first.”

“But there is a trinity of sorts now. Pacifis resides in her oasis of calm refusing to interfere, Galla Placidia was thought dead and now prefers to work within the rules of man, Viorum helps those similarly transcendent of gender binaries and Jack’s degraded to the point of large irrelevancy but that still leaves the butcher, the toymaker and the pet owner in active roles within the multiverse.” said the voice.

Daniella swallowed. “You’re Gfaxxy? You’re an Elder God? And you want me...?”

“I want you to be happy and safe.” said the voice. “The way that ends up happening is entirely down to you but I will see that no significant harm comes to you while that time approaches.”

“So why show yourself now?” asked Daniella. “What is so significant about now?”

“Well before you have faced foes external to yourself who would know when to stop.” said the voice. “The mind is a much more deadly foe.”

“So what are you going to do about it?” asked Daniella.

“I can externalise your inner turmoil for you, let you confront it with your whole mind. If you wish me to?” said the voice.

“Riiight...? “ said Daniella somewhat doubting the wisdom in agreeing to such a practice.

“On my honour nothing will actually harm you and you can leave to this place at any time if you just say the words: Phone Box.”

Daniella shrugged. “Okay then, sure. Lets fight some inner demons.”

*

Saturday the 8th March 2008

Daniella was dressed in school uniform and slouched in a chair at a desk by a fat boy with messy hair who had a finger rammed up his nose to stop it bleeding over his exercise book. Daniella looked about herself and saw 30 kids each around the ages of 15 or 16 wearing school uniform as they sat at desks. Posters about the room informed students of the elements of the periodic table, the names of the planets and their positions in the solar system oor the different types of rock.

A girl sat at the desk beside her burst the bubble gum she was chewing and Daniella’s attention was drawn back to the front of class where a tall slender man with canvas sneakers and a pinstriped suit was entering. “Now Class can anyone tell me what would happen if you were to travel back in time under multiversal theory.”

A dark skinned girl with messy hair shot her hand up eagerly.

The teacher nodded her on.

The girl with the messy hair explained eagerly. “Multiverse theory dictates that any attempt to change time will instead create a new universe, indeed even the presence of a time traveller will alter time.”

“Very good.” said the teacher with a smile. “Now can anyone tell me what wary time travellers should do if they are fine with this possibility and want to ensure the best possible outcome.”

A blonde haired girl stuck her hand up cautiously then explained. “While any change could happen surely it would be preferable to change as few things as possible so that any intended positive outcomes can be seen in a broadly similar present?”

“How right you are.” said the teacher then he narrowed he eyes at Daniella. “Can you tell me how one might go about saving the life of someone who died in one version of reality?”

Daniella looked blankly back at the teacher.

The girl with the messy hair had her hand ramrod straight and her eagerness to answer was palpable.

“Come on, you know the answer, Lucy just gave it to you, think about it Daniella.” said the teacher.

Daniella shrugged. “I don’t know. I’m sorry, I’m so sorry, I just don’t know.”

“I’m sure you’ll figure it out. “ said the teacher, then he strolled her to the white board picked up a pen and wrote “Fixed point.” on the board. “Now class lets begin learning about something new that I am something of an expert in.”

Daniella felt herself shrinking into her uniform with embarrassment until she fell.

*

Friday the 24th June 2016

Daniella landed on the roof of a building late at night. As she got to her feet she realised she was dressed in her usual suit. There was a man standing at the edge of the roof, looking into the night, he was dressed in a trench coat and fedora with a handkerchief emblazoned with the England flag over his mouth and nose.

“Who are you?” asked Daniella.

“Just a guy.” said the dark figure looking over to Daniella. Then the watchman turned back to look at the city far below. “This city is afraid of me, I’ve seen its true face and one day they’ll look up to me in terror and ask for help but I’ll just laugh and answer no.”

There was the sound of screaming far below and the watchman leapt from his perch to intervene.

Daniella waited a moment, shrugged then took a running jump off the roof after the watchman.

*

Thursday the 12th September 2024

Daniella woke up in the wreckage of an explosion, temporarily deafened. she was in a factory as men and women in bizarre costumes fought against one another. A man dressed like a shark surged forward angrily towards Daniella. Daniella let out a yelp of surprise and scrambled to her feet.

An explosion knocked the shark man back and a mocking laugh cried out. “I don’t think the good lady gave you permission to approach!”

Daniella looked in the direction of the sound and saw a short fat man with man hair and oversized bright green clothes with a troll mask warn over his face.

The shark man cried angrily. “30,000 people are dead, Pepe, you have to stop this. I can’t keep apprehending you only to have you get out and cause more deaths.”

The troll man laughed hysterically. “I died long ago, shark knight. You’d only be doing me a mercy if you kill me and we both know how much you abhor the idea of being merciful to me.”

“Let this end, Pepe.” pleaded the shark man.

The troll man shook his head. “I can’t be redeemed.”

“No...” breathed Daniella.

The troll man and the shark man both turned to look at Daniella.

“Nobody is above redemption, or at least the attempt at it.” said Daniella earnestly. “I don’t care what you’ve done, if you can step back, realise what you did was wrong and try to make amends then you deserve a chance at redemption.”

The troll man giggled.

“What’s so funny?” asked Daniella.

“Oh...” said the shark man with a smirk then he started giggling too.

The troll man said through his fit of giggles. “You’re right, you’re absolutely right, but that’s my secret. I realised long ago how far I’d gone and I honestly can’t face redemption, I’d rather dig my grave further until someone kills me.”

Daniella swallowed.

The shark man burst out laughing. “You are never going to stop are you?”

The troll man laughed.

An explosion went off nearby and through the flash Daniella saw the shark man’s hands about the troll man’s throat.

Daniella backed away. “I think I’m going to go in search of a phone box now.”

*

???????-???????

Daniella woke up on a picnic blanket in the middle of a field on a bright summers day surrounded by kittens and puppies. She was dressed in a floral summer dress and beside her sat a middle aged woman with long ginger hair. A black cat was curled up in the woman’s lap and she presented a tupperware box to Daniella. “Strawberry?”

Daniella plucked a particularly juicy one out and eagerly and devoured it. She smiled and said. “That was... interesting.”

“Was it helpful?” asked the woman.

Daniella nodded. “Kate, I take it?”

The woman nodded.

Daniella smiled. “So you’re sort of like my fairy godmother then?”

The woman shrugged. “If you like...”

Daniella nodded and picked up small brown kitten, she stroked it lovingly for a moment then said. “Thanks. I think I like having you watching over me.”

“Well I’ll be here whenever you do need me to help with the demons that plague you.” said the woman.

Daniella grinned and leaned against the woman’s shoulder. “I think I should like to stay here a while before going back.”

“Of course.” said the woman and she placed her arm around Daniella then squeezed her reassuringly.

*

Chapter 23
Woman On A Mission

September the 1st 2019

Daniella woke up in the fridge next to Lisa. Her friend slept so peacefully that Daniella lay for a moment passively delighting in her.

Light blinded Daniella as the fridge lid was opened up.

Charlotte looked down at her. “Wake up sleepy head, it’s reaping time.”

“Huh? What?” asked Lisa sleepily.

Daniella kissed her on the forehead and beamed. “Morning.”

“My Queen...” said Lisa happily she stretched then got up.

Daniella got up herself.

*

September the 1st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella waited patiently behind the curtain as Jake saw to Lisa.

Jake called “Next!”

Daniella entered.

“So, you and Tom the irredeemable huh?” asked Jake curiously.

Daniella said nothing as she approached.

“Okay, so you’re with him and don’t want me bad mouthing him? Fine, but you don’t have to give me the silent treatment.” said Jake.

“Just the quick and painless today, Jake. If you don’t mind. I have somewhere to be.” said Daniella dismissively.

“Okay, what happened?” asked Jake seriously.

Daniella stared at him.

“Something has definitely happened. So tell me.” said Jake earnestly.

Daniella sighed. “Yes, something happened but no, I don’t want to talk about it. I need to think.”

Jake nodded then said. “One quick and painless coming up.”

*

September the 1st 2019- Some Time Later

Daniella woke up floating in water. She righted herself and smiled as she saw Riksu.

Riksu blushed when she saw Daniella and beamed.

“So I’m guessing you liked last night’s festivities then?” asked Daniella with a smirk then she swam clost and whispered conspiratorially. “Unless you wanted to dump me in person before the gossip got around it was that bad?”

Riksu kissed Daniella on the lips then pulled back and looked curiously at her as she smiled. “Does that answer your question, my Queen?”

“So it went well then?” asked Daniella with a grin.

Riksu giggled. “Yes. Yes, I loved it.” She looked lovingly at Daniella. “I’m sorry I doubted you.”

Daniella beamed then kissed Riksu passionately.

Riksu pulled back and panted.

Daniella bit her lip then looked away.

“Lisa’s - Well, I sent her on ahead.” said Riksu awkwardly.

“Does anybody else know it went well?” asked Daniella curiously.

Riksu frowned. “Well I liked it so much I let your owner reap me so you could eat me after the festivites were over. Everybody’ll know that.”

Daniella looked curiously at Riksu. “Do you think you could believably spin it that you hated the

experience but that you went to my owner out of desperation and still hated the experience?”

Riksu looked confused. “Why are you asking me this? Are you dumping me?”

“Never.” said Daniella firmly.

“Then what is this about?” asked Riksu.

“I had a - Things occurred to me last night and I’m thinking that when my month on the spit is up I might do something risky. Something that I’d rather you didn’t get involved in. I don’t want anyone using the threat of harm against you to control me.” said Daniella carefully.

“So you are dumping me?” asked Riksu incredulously.

“Actually I’m asking you to pretend to dump me and betray me for the Queen of Valhalla when Lucy asks you to.” said Daniella pointedly. “Once I’ve made my move - if I’m still alive - you’ll never leave my side again.”

Riksu looked thoughtful then asked. “What about Lucy?”

“I’ll talk to her.” said Daniella carefully. “Just follow her lead.”

“Alright, I’ll tell everyone I dumped you.” said Riksu irritably.

Daniella nodded then said. “I’m not actually asking you to dump me to be clear.”

“Good. I have no intention of giving you up.” said Riksu with a smirk.

Daniella beamed.

Riksu coughed then pointed at the water. “Would you mind?”

Daniella chuckled as she forced Riksu’s head under the water.

*

September the 1st 2019 - Some Time Later

Tom pulled Daniella aside while his colleagues sliced up the shark.

Tom beamed as he quickly sliced into Daniella and inserted something inside her.

“I hope you learned a lot from last night.” said Daniella with a smirk.

“Oh I have...” said Tom as he looked at her hungrily.

Daniella kissed him sweetly on the lips.

Tom beamed and stroked her cheek fondly.

“The hose, Tom.” said Daniella with a smirk.

“Right.” said Tom as he pulled back.

*

September the 1st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up in her room to find Lucy lay beside her.

Lucy was dressed and looked curiously at Daniella. “Riksu said it was very important that I talk to you. Do you have any idea, why?”

Daniella nodded then said. “Lucy, you’re in charge while I’m otherwise indisposed right?”

Lucy nodded. “I am your Agrippa.”

Daniella smiled. “So if you were to turn on me and join the Queen of Valhalla others would follow you, right?”

Lucy looked curiously at Daniella. “Probably. Why?”

Daniella rolled over on top of Lucy and smiled as she looked down at the blonde. “I’m going to do something stupid. It isn’t believable that Lisa would betray me but I want you to turn everyone else against me and swear to follow the Queen of Valhalla the day I come off the spit.”

“Just how stupid are you talking if you’re prepared to reach this level of self-sabotage?” asked Lucy curiously.

Daniella stared at Lucy. “Do you want to actually betray me and stage a mutiny or merely pretend to stage one?”

Lucy groaned.

Daniella sighed and got up off Lucy.

“Lie back down, little girl. I’m not done with you yet.” said Lucy lightly.

“Yes, you are.” said Daniella as she left.

*

September the 1st 2019 Some Time Later

Daniella found Rachel talking to some ladies she didn’t know. She coughed.

The ladies turned and noticed Daniella.

Rachel stood up and looked to Daniella. “My queen, what is it?”

“We need to talk frankly about our relationship. I don’t want to lie to you but neither do I want to mislead you or treat you unethically.” said Daniella carefully.

Rachel nodded. “Alright. Lets walk to the spit and you can tell me on the way.”

Daniella nodded.

*

September the 1st 2019 Some Time later

Tears and snot streamed down Rachel's face. "You're absolutely certain."

Daniella hugged Rachel. "If there was another way I would do everything possible to make it work. I'm not abandoning you but you had to know the options."

Lucy approached with Lisa naked beside her.

"Rachel?" asked Lisa, concerned.

Daniella looked to Lucy. "Be there for her, okay? Offer her love but be honest with her."

Lucy nodded.

Tom waited by the spit.

Daniella looked to Lisa. "Are you ready?"

"It doesn't matter if I'm not does it?" asked Lisa dryly.

"I suppose it doesn't." said Daniella as she strode forward between the armed guards. She smirked. "Tom, always a pleasure to put my lips around your long hard shaft."

Tom tried not to laugh as he fetched the shaft.

*

Daniella arrived in the afterlife of the Farsh-nukes and marked into the Great Farsh-nuke's tent.

Another Daniella was in a bikini as she sat on the great Farsh-nuke's lap.

"We need to talk about someone who came to visit last night." said Daniella bluntly.

*

Chapter 24
In The Zone

September the 1st 2019 Some Time Later

Daniella woke up on the fridge and knocked on the door.

Lisa stirred.

Daniella sighed and kissed her.

The fridge door was opened.

Daniella pulled back from Lisa awkwardly as she noticed Riksu looking down at her.

“Would you like a little longer?” asked Riksu dryly as she looked to Tom. “He could always fuck me while we wait.”

“Don’t you dare.” said Daniella as she shot up.

Tom and Riksu laughed.

Lisa got up beside Daniella.

“Now that you work here you have more ability to get stuff to me, right?” asked Daniella as she exited the fridge. “I mean you can hide it in the kitchen.”

“I suppose.” said Tom uncertainly. “Why?”

“I need a pad of paper, some pencils, a protractor, a ruler, a compass, some coloured pencils and a fabric tape measure.” said Daniella.

Tom sighed and pulled out his tablet computer. “Let me take a note.”

Daniella looked curiously at Riksu. “What are you doing here?”

“Officially I’m trying out being reaped by Tom as a last ditch attempt to try to find a way to connect with you. It will fail but begin a tumultuous affair. Meaning I have the perfect excuse to spend time with you without anyone noticing.” said Riksu happily.

Daniella laughed and hugged Riksu then looked curiously at her. “I love you, I hope you know that?”

“The feeling is very much mutual.” said Riksu sweetly.

“So... Paper, pencils, compass, protractor, ruler...What else?” asked Tom as he looked at his tablet computer.

“Coloured pencils and a fabric tape measure.” said Daniella.

“Right, right...” said Tom.

“So what happened?” asked Riksu gently.

Daniella looked to Lisa and said. “Sweetie, perhaps you’d like Tom to reap you first?”

Lisa laughed but gave a nod and saluted.

“What happened?” asked Riksu seriously. “Something has happened to you to change things. Tell me.”

“Absolutely not.” said Daniella firmly as she looked to Riksu.

“So something did happen then?” asked Riksu, concerned.

Daniella sighed and rolled her eyes. “Yes, something happened. No, I don’t want to talk about it.”

“Fine.” said Riksu bluntly. “So what do you want to talk about?”

“You.” said Daniella with a smile. “Tell me about you.”

*

September the 2nd.

Daniella entered through the curtain to find Jake had put down his knives and sat on the chair he used in his work. He sighed when he saw her.

“Let me guess, Riksu, Lucy and Lisa asked you what you knew about what happened to me?” asked Daniella dryly.

Jake looked curiously at Daniella but gave a nod.

Daniella whistled then looked about his utensils. They were all clean.

“You know what I’m going to ask you.” said Jake quietly.

“And you know what my answer will be.” said Daniella dismissively.

“They won’t stop asking questions you know.” said Jake pointedly. “You’ll have to tell them something.”

Daniella laughed.

Jake stared at her.

Daniella turned to face Jake. “When you hear the rumours say you heard different ones. Maybe one guard has heard I saw Jesus. Another thinks I’m demonically possessed. Perhaps a third thinks Tom raped me.”

“Tom raped you.” said Jake, stunned.

“Oh, don’t be daft.” said Daniella irritably then she approached Jake and looked meaningfully at him. “What I am saying is that I want you to be subtle and to not scare my friends but that you should feed the rumour mill and let a scandal of gossip build.”

Jake stared at Daniella.

Daniella shrugged. “Alternatively, you can tell them the truth. That something did happen and I am acting strangely but you don’t know why and you are concerned about me.”

Jake was silent for a long moment then asked seriously. “Did this thing involve anyone here? Is anyone hurting you? Has someone done something?”

Daniella sighed and dropped to her knees before Jake. “I swear to you upon all I hold dear that no

one I care about has done anything to cause this."

Jake scowled then stood up. "Fine. Lets do this then."

*

September the 2nd - Some Time Later

Daniella had been through the full day's harvest and woke in her room to find Rachel naked beside Lucy. Lucy was idly fingering Rachel as she kissed her.

Daniella coughed awkwardly.

Lucy pulled back from Rachel and looked curiously at Daniella. "Feel up to talking?"

"I can go." said Daniella hesitantly.

"Oh, please don't." said Rachel earnestly. "We've been waiting for you?"

Daniella got up and approached the pair. "You have?"

"Don't be mad at her but Lucy told me everything. Including that what you're planning next relies upon Lucy pretending to lead a mutiny. We've agreed that whatever happens next between me and you, I will follow Lucy when the time comes." explained Rachel seriously.

"Good." said Daniella as she took a seat beside Rachel. "Have you and Lucy talked about what I said yesterday?"

Lucy looked to Rachel.

Rachel nodded then looked to Daniella and shrugged. "I wanted to believe you were wrong. I wanted to believe you had an ulterior motive but then I talked to Lucy and she broke it down for me. My future lies with you. Lucy is certain my future lies as your tamed pet to enjoy as you please but I am hopeful that we can find another solution as you indicated."

"It's a long shot." said Daniella gently. "I mean I don't even know how we are going to escape yet."

"I know." said Rachel weakly then she sighed. "I'm not against being your pet and I do believe you would give me a good life. I'm just not willing to give up on the possibility of starting again as a teacher."

Daniella nodded then asked. "If you like I could take charge of you and let Lucy reap you when I'm gone?"

"I think that would be okay." said Rachel nervously.

"Good." said Daniella sweetly then she looked to Lucy. "Agrippa, if you wouldn't mind extracting what Tom left inside me before I go on the spit?"

Lucy nodded.

*

September the 2nd 2019- Some Time Later

Daniella stepped out of the fridge with Lisa after their turn on the spit.

Tom handed her a messenger bag. “Your supplies but don’t ask me to make a habit of this.”

Daniella frowned. “Okay. Can you insert your tablet computer into one of my hearts and buy a new one for yourself?”

Tom sighed but reached for his tablet computer.

Daniella opened the messenger bag.

“So what do you need the paper for?” asked Riksu curiously.

Daniella smiled. “A project I’m working on. Now tell me about your family. You said they ran a business.”

Riksu nodded. “That’s right...”

*

September the 5th 2019

Two days had passed uneventfully to a set routine. Daniella was harvested, recovered, snuggled up with Rachel and tamed the delightful woman as she got to know her more then Daniella took her turn on the spit and received a lesson from the plane of the Farsh-nukes before she woke up, fucked Tom, talked to Riksu and worked on sketches for her project.

Today seemed no different.

Tom was giving Lisa a quick ride as the sweet submissive thing had felt a little left out.

Daniella was talking to Riksu and sketching something.

Tom rode Lisa hard and and grunted. “Little slut. You like this, little slut.”

Lisa panted. “Yes, Master. Yes. Yes. Yes.”

Daniella shaded an area as she mused. “So after Montreal?”

Riksu thought for a moment then said. “After Montreal -”

Five armed guards in matched black uniform with balaclavas and gas masks stormed inside the kitchen as they screamed.

Daniella and Riksu were forced to the ground almost immediately and restrained.

Tom was pulled off Lisa then both he and Lisa were forced the floor and restrained.

The restraints were the same for each. Their hands were pulled behind their backs and ziptied together, their ankles were zip tied together, gags were forced inside their mouths and black sacks

were forced over their heads then pulled tight about their necks.

Daniella, Riksu and Lisa had their necks snapped then Daniella was carried away.

*

September the 5th 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up, still bound but with the hood and gag removed, strapped to a chair as four strangers and one familiar face looked back at her. They were all dressed in the clothes of armed guards and seemed to be sitting on the large double bed of a hotel room. At least three of them were. A tall red head was by the door. A tall blonde was by the window and looked out between curtains.

Daniella scowled at the familiar face though. “There have to be easier ways to get in contact, Magpie.”

Magpie looked serious. “Word on the island is you’ve lost your mind, that your girlfriend dumped you, your closest friend is planning to betray you and even the good reaper Jake is worried about you.”

Daniella nodded and smirked. “So I’m not restrained for your pleasure?”

Magpie glared at her.

One of her friends on the bed, the blonde one, said acidly. “We’re submissives. Why would we take pleasure in your being restrained?”

The red head by the door glanced at Daniella and shrugged. “I can see the appeal.”

Magpie snapped at her. “Chloe, we’ve talked about this. Do I need to cane you again?”

The redhead by the door scowled and muttered. “No, Mistress.”

“You cane her?” asked Daniella curiously.

Magpie sighed. “Chloe over there is what’s called a bratty submissive. Basically where as you or my other friends here will ask nicely for attention and pain to bring them pleasure Chloe finds it it hard to ask directly and prefers to act out and so ‘earn punishments’. We’ve talked it over and it is very consensual but obviously this situation is not the greatest for any of our moods so she sometimes need attention at inappropriate times.”

Daniella nodded curiously. “So you took my advice then?”

Magpie nodded then nodded to first the blonde on the bed, then a redhead who was also on the bed before finally she nodded to the blonde by the window. “That’s Jessica, she likes to act out a bit herself but she’s mostly well behaved. That’s Erin, our little sweet baby submissive. The mighty blonde by the window is Christa.”

“I actually worked for a lawyer the Great Geoff hired to represent his business when Geoff started making the moves on me and I decided to dig deeper. I went to confront him about it and ended up here.” said Christa bitterly.

“What about Jessica and Erin?” asked Daniella curiously.

“Frank and Geoff’s company has a significant number of stocks owned by a certain Richard Raspberry and he runs a correctional program for wayward teens. Jessica and Erin were found making out as school, were sent to one of the camps and a couple of days later they found themselves on a plane here. I intercepted them.” said Magpie.

Daniella nodded then said. “Alright, I trust you. There’s a tablet computer in one of me hearts. Take it and get all the data you can find about the company and how its run onto the tablet computer. I’m also going to want maps of of the island, the facility and where to find Frank at any given time.”

Magpie got off the bed and approached warily. “Okay, I’ll tell you more, if you tell me what you’re planning and what has happened to you?

“If I tell you, you’ll think I’m mad and you’ll try to stop me. said Daniella bluntly.

Magpie released some of the straps about Daniella then reached into her jacket and pulled out a sharp knife. She carved into Daniella and said casually. “I don’t care if you have lost your mind. Given everything you’ve been through it’s very understandable. I only care if I can help. I mean you did imprint upon me.”

“How much do you know about the Farsh-nuke?” asked Daniella uncertainly.

“Christa?” asked Magpie as she searched Daniella’s hearts one by one.

“Legally speaking the Farsh-nuke has the same status as a corporation in that he has rights but that he is treated as a collection of individuals as far as responsibilities go. He is also considered an alien who was naturalised as an American citizen.” explained Christa.

“I’ve met him, I’ve been learning about manipulating logic from him.” said Daniella.

“That’s not possible, the Farsh-nuke is dead.” said Christa.

“The Farsh-nuke is condemned to another plane of existence. When I go on the spit. I can talk to him. It’s complicated but I can explain later. That’s not the important part though. That’s not the something that happened. Another entity approached me. I’m starting to attract the attention of the cosmic powers and I have a guardian angel.” said Daniella.

Magpie retrieved the tablet computer and stood back. “Dany, I think you might have been on the spit a bit too long.”

There was a green flash.

A tall gorgeous middle aged ginger woman approached. “Our friend is telling the truth. Pleased to meet you. I’m Gfaxxy Quluwmcy but most people just call me Kate.”

Magpie dropped the tablet computer.

Kate caught it, placed it carefully on the bed then started to free Daniella.

Daniella looked pointedly at Magpie.

“So...” said Magpie as she recovered and sat back on the bed. “What else do you want to know?”

Kate pulled Daniella to her feet then sat down in the vacated chair and pulled Daniella onto her lap.

“Tell me about what you’ve been up to since we last talked and what’s been happenning on the island and the facility.” said Daniella.

Kate pulled Daniella close and hugged her tight.

Dabniella looked to her and gave her a kiss on the cheek then looked to Magpie expectantly.

“Well I took your advice. I managed to free about thirty people. I intended to just leave and get attention of the authorities but we found a nearby island and decided it would be practical to set up camp. It took time to do that and in that time the issue of those we were leaving behind became more pressing. Some opted to stay behind and build up the camp. Some wanted to liberate more women and some wanted to take the fight to the enemy.” explained Magpie.

“Hi.” said Jessica cheerfully.

Erin smirked.

Christa chuckled.

Magpie pulled the girls on the bed close then kissed each of them. She looked to Daniella and smirked. “So that’s us. There are six teams. One on the island we found. One intercepts new arrivals when possible and leads them back the island and the rest of us are doing our best to learn as much as we can about the island and the facility. Our plan is to slowly infiltrate it by replacing the majority of the guards with liberated and loyal women.”

“It’s very early days of course.” said Chloe irritably as she looked to Daniella. “I don’t think the liberation team has even struck yet.”

“She’s right.” said Magpie with a shrug then she removed her arms from about her friends and leaned forward. “I have however heard that we may not be the only ones trying to stir up trouble. I think you’ve been a good influence on Frank as he is clearly spooked and has been severely discipling a number of more sadistic guards and reapers who were making things bad for people in the facility. This has caused a faction of reapers and guards to become bitter and there are talks of retaliation.”

“Before I arrived here I found proposals for men to be added to the facility by Frank with Geoff very hostile about it. From what I’ve heard since I’ve been here this tension between them has only increased. To Frank this is just a business, an awful awful business that could get him killed. To Geoff it’s a harem of submissives waiting to welcome him when he retires.” explained Christa.

“Interesting.” said Daniella then she looked to Kate. “What about you? What can you bring to this?”

“It’s not within my nature to interfere and there are dangerous factions that could take action against you if my influence was noticed but I could give your friends a ship. A nice large place where they could live and farm safely. It would be relatively standard technology for your culture and time period but it would probably be a step up.” said Kate carefully.

“That would help a tremendous amount.” said Magpie.

“What do you want in return?” asked Daniella curiously.

“For now nothing. I’m concerned for you and want to help where I can but I would be lying if I said I could think of nothing I wanted from you.” said Kate diplomatically.

“Alright, let me talk to Artemis first and then we can talk terms.” said Daniella carefully.

“Okay, now can I have some more thorough explanations?” asked Magpie.

“Sure.” said Daniella.

*

September the 8th 2019

Two days passed uneventfully. Questions were asked about who the guards were that invaded the kitchen and took Daniella and what she did to her. Daniella quietly insisted she had nothing she wished to say about what happened. Even to Jake, Tom, Riksu, Lucy and Lisa. This naturally only fuelled the rumours.

On the third day since it had happened Daniella woke up after her turn on the spit to find herself in Artemis’s bedroom. She showered then entered the living room.

Artemis sat drinking a cup of tea as she watched surveillance footage of Jake reaping Daniella.

“What are you doing?” asked Daniella curiously as she approached.

“My job.” said Artemis as she paused the playback. “As both your owner and Frank’s loyal employee it is up to me to figure out what has been going on with you and why you are acting so strangely.

“Well it’s very simple I am going to kill Frank and everyone that works for him.” said Daniella casually.

Artemis glared at her. “I’m serious.”

“So am I.” said Daniella with a shrug.

Artemis stood up and stared at her. “What happened to you?”

Daniella smiled thinly then asked. “Have you ever played Skyrim?”

“Is there a point to this?” asked Artemis dryly.

Daniella nodded then she took to the sofa and reclined. “You begin Skyrim as a prisoner about to die when suddenly you find out you’re the dragonborn and it’s all very exciting.”

“Alright, I’m listening.” said Artemis as she sat back in her armchair.

“Then you complete another of the quests, the Thieves Guild say. You are a champion of Nocturnal

and the King of the Thieves Guild and it's all rather neat but then you enter Markarth..." said Daniella carefully.

"Oh I like Markarth. Lisbet and Eola are cuties and they have such good taste." said Artemis happily.

Daniella rolled her eyes then explained. "Anyway there's this Vigilant of Stendar asking if you've seen anyone enter the house. There's a bit of a run around and you have to kill him as Malog Bol asks you to fetch this priest of Boethiah. So you go and you lead this priest to Malog Bol's altar. Then you beat this poor priest to death over and over until finally Malog is satisfied and he gives you an orcish mace. As weapons go, it's not the worst but it's often not going to be better than your current gear either. Do you know what happens then?"

"You join the cult of Namira?" asked Artemis with a smirk.

"You realise that functionally speaking your character is a class above everybody else. The great Daedra themselves can declare you their champion and while it's nice you don't ultimately care because what matters is your goal. Granted Skyrim does not have the greatest plotting so your goal may be to get the best hour or level a skill but you take my point." said Daniella earnestly.

"No, I really don't think I do." said Artemis bluntly.

"I've spoken to the Farsh-nuke." said Daniella casually.

"You what?" asked Artemis. Horrified.

"He's been teaching me things daily but that's not the important bit. That's just Nocturnal doing her little quest. I've also attracted the attention of a certain Gfaxxy Quluwmcy." explained Daniella.

"How much attention?" asked Artemis nervously.

"She's my guardian angel and she'd like to meet you." said Daniella.

"Alright, lets get you dressed then I want to know everything." said Artemis.

*

September the 9th 2019

Daniella was the last through the curtain and found a squat warty faced woman with yellow teeth in his work space.

"Stand on the X, remain silent and let me do my job if you know what's good for you." She said as she washed her hands.

Daniella strode on to the indicated spot and stood relaxed with her hands by her sides.

The squat woman shot a glance at her and smiled then asked curiously. "Anybody else behind you?"

"No, Miss." said Daniella politely.

The squat woman nodded then dried her hands. “I take that you are the supposed Queen In Waiting?”

“I am called that, yes, Miss.” said Daniella carefully.

“You were very fond of the man who used to work this job weren’t you?”

Daniella was momentarily alarmed but she tried to remain focused. “Yes, Miss.”

The squat woman studied Daniella as she circled her then she picked up a set of tin snips and approached her front. “Are you a screamer?”

“I never was with Jake but I respect that you have to consider your safety first, Miss.” said Daniella seriously.

The squat woman nodded then said. “Cut the crap, girl. I just had long line of girls complaining that I’m not Jake and asking where he went and now his beloved princess doesn’t want to say anything?”

Daniella sighed and closed her eyes. “I’m sorry about my friends. Obviously I have questions but I’m smart enough to gather that you’ll have had a long day already and I don’t want to make it any harder on you.”

The squat woman smiled then she tossed the tin snips away. “I’ve got time for you, Princess. Jake was quite insistent that I look out for you so lets start again shall we? I’m Belinda Hawthorne. I’ve worked in abattoirs all my life and to me this is no different except that I’m not actually killing anything this time.”

Daniella frowned. “When you put it like that it’s oddly ethical.”

Belinda smirked then she grabbed a chair and pointed to a stool. “Grab that and lets talk.”

Daniella did as she was told. When she sat on the stool opposite Belinda she crossed her hands on her lap and asked. “So where is Jake?”

“Officially he’s sick.” said Belinda with a shrug as she looked down at the slim blonde. “Unofficially, he left a long document in the office explaining who you and your friends are, how best to butcher you and the kind of care you each needed. He also wrote at length about you and how important you were to him, that I should like out for you and contact people if you seemed unwell or in danger. In more danger than the facility normally causes you anyway. He made clear to me that he will have left the island and that he’s making for the mainland.”

Daniella swallowed but gave a nod.

“He also said that you had a crush on him. Is that true?” asked Belinda.

Daniella shrugged. “Aren’t many men here.”

Belinda nodded then said seriously. “We don’t have to be enemies.”

Daniella smiled. “I don’t believe I have given any indication that I saw you as an enemy, Miss.”

Belinda smiled. “I suppose not but you certainly aren’t the flirty and talkative thing Jake described.”

“You told me to remain silent, Miss.” said Daniella pointedly.

“I suppose I did.” said Belinda thoughtfully then she stood up. “Well as long as you obey my orders when I give you them I see no harm in us talking.”

Daniella smiled as she stood up. “Miss, there is just one last thing I would like to make clear if I may?”

“You may.” said Belinda with a smile.

“I do not wish to cast aspersions or make presumptions but in the interest of clarity I want you to know this.” said Daniella awkwardly.

“Go on.” said Belinda sweetly.

“I am submissive and bisexual, Miss. If at any point you wish to stroke me, caress me, penetrate me or kiss me you need only ask and often I won’t mind if you just act up on me without notifying me.” said Daniella seriously.

Belinda bit her lip as she smirked then she pulled Daniella into a hug and kissed her on the forehead. She pulled back and looked into Daniella’s eyes. “You are very sweet girl and I may take the opportunity you provide to explore whether a woman like you would interest me but I am fairly certain I’m straight and vanilla.”

Daniella blushed. “Sorry if I was inappropriate, Miss.”

“Not at all.” said Belinda as she fetched a knife. “Now lets work together to get this done well shall we?”

“Yes, Miss.” said Daniella happily.

*

September the 20th 2019

Tom had reaped Lisa and was quietly reaping Lisa.

Riksu was talking to Daniella as Daniella sketched.

“Then there’s my cousin Anju -”

Daniella held up a hand.

“What is it?” asked Riksu.

Daniella turned the sketchbook to Riksu. “Do you think you and the others could make this for me?”

Riksu studied the sketches with interest. “So this is what you’ve been doing?”

“There are recommendations about where to source the different materials.” said Daniella awkwardly.

“You mean who to slaughter.” said Riksu with a smirk then she looked curiously at Daniella. “I hope I’m in this?”

Daniella snorted then smiled. “Yes, Riksu, you are quite key to the creation.”

Riksu beamed. “Well I think we can get this done for you. When do you want it?”

“A couple of days before I go off the spit. If it’s possible?” asked Daniella hopefully. “There are delivery instructions on the pad.”

Riksu nodded. “We’ll do our best.”

“So, your cousin Anju?” asked Daniella.

Riksu smiled as she set down the book.

*

Chapter 25
Hell Hath No Fury

September the 30th 2019

Daniella and Lisa approached the spit.

Tom beamed as they approached.

Suddenly klaxons sounded as Guards rushed out to swarm every balcony and walkway overlooking the central chamber of Valhalla. Screens built into surfaces lit up.

“Hello, my little lambs, I am the Great Geoff and I call upon you all now to remain calm and obey my good friend, Frank. You will not harm him.” said the recording on the screens.

Frank and Artemis ran down and upper staircase that extended two flights to carry them and more guards to the ground.

“Today is a momentous day!” called Frank as he arrived and called to the gathered and gathering women. “Today two of your own rejoin you, cleansed of their past sins.

Lisa looked uncertainly at Daniella.

Daniella wasn’t reacting.

Lucy arrived with Riksu, Kirsty, Hai, Hotaru, Rachel and many others.

The Queen of Valhalla herself and her retinue arrived.

Daniella looked to Lucy.

Lucy caught Daniella's gaze and gave a nod.

The Queen of Valhalla strode forth defiantly. "Frank, she and Lisa need to serve out their time.

"I have made my decision." said Frank firmly. He glanced back at Tom. Guards passively moved in tight around him. Frank looked to Daniella. "You have been most cooperative this last month. Even when your favourite Reaper left."

Daniella swallowed nervously.

"Sweetie, it's alright. Frank knows you're a good girl." said Artemis as she approached and hugged Daniella.

"Actually, I know the opposite." said Frank bluntly.

Lucy pulled Riksu out of sight behind the Queen of Valhalla.

"I knew it!" cried the Queen of Valhalla. "What has the traitorous bitch been up to?"

"She's been working with Artemis and Tom to smuggle in gear she's going to use to escape." said Frank coldly.

Suddenly armed guards took hold of Artemis and Tom

"Strip them!" cried Frank.

Artemis and Tom were forcibly stripped.

"It was paper and pencils!" cried Tom incredulously. "How the fuck are paper and pencils going to cause them to escape!?"

"I declared everything I ever gave Dany and her friends!" cried Artemis desperately.

"This woman is dangerous and you have been working to help her. What's more is you are both intimately close to her!" bellowed Frank furiously.

"So is Daniella going back on the spit?" asked the Queen of Valhalla curiously.

"No but Artemis is." said Frank coldly then he pulled out his pistol and presented it to Daniella. "Now you are going to kill your boyfriend because if you don't I will kill Artemis and Lisa."

Daniella held out her hand to receive the gun. She was eerily calm.

"You cannot be so stupid as to hand her a loaded gun." cried the Queen of Valhalla,

"I know what I am doing." said Frank with a sneer as he handed Daniella the gun.

Daniella sighted down the barrel at Tom.

"You can't be serious!?" cried Tom desperately.

"The needs of the many outweigh the needs of the few!" cried Frank jubilantly. "The good little

feminist here won’t allow two to die in the place of one!”

“Remember this moment. Remember that I chose to kill a man I love instead of you. Remember that mercy.” said Daniella coldly.

“Please!?” begged Tom.

“I loved you.” said Daniella then she pulled the trigger.

Tom’s head exploded.

Silence.

“Thank you.” said Frank quietly as he took the gun.

“You monster!” roared Lucy suddenly.

Daniella turned to face Lucy.

Lucy threw a punch that knocked Daniella to the ground. “I refuse to follow this pathetic bimbo any longer! There is one Queen of Valhalla and she deserves our respect and service!”

“Cannibal freak!” cried Riksu as she ran up to Daniella and kicked her while she was down.

Kirsty, Rachel, Hai, Hotaru and at least thirty others followed.

The Queen of Valhalla grinned like a cheshire cat.

“Put Tom and Artemis up on the spit!” cried Frank as he looked to the Queen of Valhalla. “The one true Queen of Valhalla deserves a feast!”

“Lucy, Riksu, if you want to prove your loyalty reap Lisa and Dany. We’ll eat the bimbos tonight.” said the Queen of Valhalla casually.

Lucy and Riksu let those who had been loyal to Daniella as they surrounded the two blondes and carried them off to butcher them.

*

September the 30th 2019 Some Time Later

Daniella woke up on a mattress in the middle of a large white room.

Lisa was naked and sleeping peacefully beside her.

Daniella stood up.

Part of the wall slid away and Kate entered in her flowing blue dress.

Daniella placed a finger to her lips and pointed to Lisa.

Kate smiled and offered Daniella her hand.

Daniella took it and followed her outside into a white corridor.

Kate turned back and started entering commands into a touch screen panel embedded in the wall. She turned back to Daniella and smiled. “I just activated a sound dampening field around the room to ensure she gets her rest. A microphone will relay anything she says to people monitoring her well being.”

“What is this place?” asked Daniella.

“A spaceship. We displaced your and Lisa hearts up here so you could recover and so you could sneak away without being noticed.” said Kate happily.

“Thank you.” said Daniella as she hugged Kate.

Kate beamed and stroked Daniella’s cheek. “Are you still sure you’re okay with your end of the bargain.”

“Absolutely.” said Daniella with a warm and genuine smile.

“I want to clean you before I send you down.” said Kate sweetly.

“Oh absolutely I’ll need a shower.” said Daniella happily.

“Of course.” said Kate awkwardly as she looked away.

“What were you thinking?” asked Daniella curiously.

“It doesn’t matter. I’ll lead you to the shower and take you to a drying room then we’ll send you back down to get your clothes.” said Kate.

Daniella nodded.

*

October the 1st 2019 - 4am

Frank was working late in his office. The paperwork involved with killing an employee was going to be bothering him for days.

Suddenly his computer monitor split halfway down the middle as a loud explosion recoiled

Frank stared at the bullet embedded in his monitor then looked up.

Daniella was smiling down at him from a ventilation shaft.

“What the fuck!?” cried Frank as he removed his noise cancelling headphones.

“I can easily kill you before any back up arrives so back away from the desk and we can talk.” said Daniella.

Frank nodded and lift up his hands as he stood up. “Alright, lets talk.”

He backed away slowly.

Daniella jumped down from the ventilation shaft. She wore white running shoes, white leather trousers a white leather tunic, white leather waistcoat and a long white leather double breasted coat down that when down to her shins. Her long blonde hair was tied behind her back in a ponytail and she wore a wide brimmed white leather hat. She carried one of the guns the guards used at the facility.

“You certainly cut quite the image I’ll give you that.” said Frank.

Daniella jumped off the desk. “The first time we met you complemented me on my restraint and suggested we could work together. I want to offer you a similar deal.”

“This doesn’t feel like a similar deal.” said Frank.

“Last time I had a gun to my head but I stood down without bloodshed because I saw you were reasonable. I hope you will be similarly intelligent.” said Daniella as she advanced upon Frank. “You killed my boyfriend and you thought that would stop me. That was stupid. Unbelievably stupid. Imagine if I had killed one of your guards that first day?”

Frank swallowed then grimaced. “I suppose that’s a fair point.”

“I will be honest with you, Frank, I am being equally stupid in coming here.” said Daniella casually.

“I can see that.” said Frank with a smirk.

“Not for the reason you think, Frank. You see I am ready and my people are ready. I could just kill you, kill your guards and liberate my friends. Tom’s death changes nothing.” said Daniella coldly. “I didn’t need you to back away from the desk. Your panic button does nothing and nobody is coming to rescue you.”

“Then why don’t you kill me?” asked Frank bluntly.

“I want to offer you a chance. This is just business to you and you could have run things a lot worse so let me give you a counter offer. You remain in charge of this facility so that those who now regard it as home can stay and keep having the lives they want. Some will want to leave, perhaps many, but I think we’ll both be surprised how many will choose to stay if you made just a few small changes.” said Daniella carefully.

“Alright, you’ve surprised me. You want to take over the business?” asked Frank curiously.

“I want to take over the island. Obviously the abductions will need to stop as you move to a recruitment system based around volunteers and people will need to be able to leave whenever they like and have personal property and media again. You’ll need to build dormitories and allow pets. People should also have provision to study while here and pursue careers while living here.” explained Daniella.

“A lot of those I could actually implement right now and a volunteer system is an interesting thing to consider but there are planes in the air carrying new women to the island as we speak. I can’t stop them and it would be ridiculous to tell people we just abducted that they can go.” said Frank carefully.

“You’re bullshitting me but I’ll let it slide.” said Daniella with a shrug. “You can have a grace period of a month to get a last intake and I’ll allow an extra two months to get men into the island.”

“Are you serious?” asked Frank incredulously. “You’ll leave and there’ll be not blood shed with a month’s grace period and then two months just to get men in after that?”

Daniella nodded. “I’m trying to be reasonable. I’ll know you’ve agreed to my terms when the man and woman who put me here arrive.”

“Do you have your terms in writing?” asked Frank, intrigued.

Daniella pulled a sheet of paper out of her pocket. “Once they arrive I’ll meet you in the kitchen and follow you to your office to discuss terms.”

“That’s very reasonable.” said Frank cheerfully. “Leave your terms on the desk and return to Valhalla. I’ll consider your terms if you’ll return to be harvested.”

Daniella smiled. “I’d like nothing better.”

Frank nodded then said. “If you’re wondering. I don’t know what happened to Jake.”

“Close your eyes, put your heads on on your head and face the wall. You will count to a hundred then you may call for tech support for your monitor.” said Daniella.

Frank obliged.

*

October the 1st 2019 - 10 am

“You’re late.” said Belinda dryly.

Daniella walked sleepily into the room. “My boyfriend died last night so I didn’t get much sleep.”

“Well I’ll give you some rest soon enough, eh.” said Belinda cheerfully.

Daniella pouted then sighed. “I suppose you will.”

“Sorry I’m not that receptive to your plight I just had to reap this short lady and she would not stop criticising my methods.” said Belinda irritably.

Daniella glared at Belinda. “Well at least you can take solace in the though that your boss will never kill you to get to me.”

Belinda burst out laughing.

“You really are a callous cunt aren’t you.” said Daniella acidly.

Belinda stared at her.

“He made me kill him and then his body was eaten by the women of Valhalla.

Belinda swallowed then walked off. “You’re right. I’m sorry.” She turned back to face Daniella and cried. “What the fuck do I say, Dany? Nothing I say can make that right. Nothing. I was trying to keep things light because it’s my job to butcher you but you’re right that was fucked up and nothing can make that right.”

“I went too far.” said Daniella quietly. “I’m sorry.”

“Well you can’t take it out on the man who killed him so I get it. I don’t like it but I get it.” said Belinda then she approached Daniella and pulled her into a hug. “For what it’s worth if you do pull off this mutiny I’m right beside you.”

Daniella pulled back. “You shouldn’t say things like that.”

Belinda smiled sadly. “You’re right. You’re right but I’m glad I said it because I meant it.”

Daniella pulled Belinda into a hug.

Belinda pulled back and put her hands either side of Daniella’s face. “For the record, I don’t think I’m straight anymore.”

Daniella smiled.

Belinda kissed her sweetly on the lips then pulled back. “I love you, Princess.”

Daniella beamed.

Belinda snapped her neck and caught her body. “Sweet dreams.”

*

October the 1st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella swam to the next stage by herself. Everybody else had gone on ahead.

George cried out and ran over from his station. “Oh, thank god!”

Daniella approached uncertainly. “I’m sorry, I -”

“You have nothing to apologise for.” said George firmly as he hugged her.

Daniella saw Fred approach.

Fred nodded. “We heard about what happened to Tom. There’s been dissatisfaction with the way he’s been running the place for a while but that was too far.”

George pulled back and held Daniella’s hands. “We’re on your side, okay?”

Fred smiled. “Whatever it takes.”

Daniella burst into tears.

“We’re technically on our lunch break now so we have time.” said Fred genially.

“I loved him!” cried Daniella desperately.

George nodded. “He was a good friend.”

Fred took off his jacket and laid it over Daniella.

George gently led Daniella to a chair. “This way. We’ll have a good long chat alright.”

Daniella looked to Fred and whispered in horror. “I need to be drowned.”

“I’ll do it when you’re ready.” said Fred gently.

George nodded. “We’ll see you right.”

Daniella shrieked as more tears came.

*

October the 1st 2019 - Some Time Later

Daniella woke up in her bed chamber to find Lisa dressed in a short leather skirt and tight leather top as she sewed something with a bone needle, thread made from hair and some tanned leather.

“Sorry, did I wake you?” asked Lisa gently.

“What are you making?” asked Daniella curiously.

“A bag.” said Lisa sheepishly. “More specifically a bag so you can carry my body on your back while you drink me.”

Daniella laughed then got up and walked over and hugged Lisa.

“Artemis is on the spit and everyone else...” Lisa went back to her sewing. “I know this is part of your plan but I think it’s damned foolish and it feels cruel.”

“I’m only sorry you didn’t defect.” said Daniella quietly.

“My Queen?” asked Lisa uncertainly.

“I’m actually about to do that just now. Would you mind being bought along as a peace offering?” asked Daniella.

“Of course not.” said Lisa as she set aside her sewing. “I’ll just get undressed then we’ll go.”

*

October the 1st 2019 - Some Time Later

A tall dark skinned woman in a leather dress dropped Lisa and Daniella down on the floor before the Queen of Valhalla’s throne. The blondes had their hands bounds behind their backs. “I found

these two by the spit. They asked to be brought to you."

"Thank you, Jacinda. You may have first pick of their flesh when they have been cooked." said the Queen of Valhalla.

The woman who had bought them nodded then stood silently.

"Well, well, well, if it isn't the Queen In Waiting and her bimbo fuck toy! What are you doing here!?" called the Queen of Valhalla callously.

"I offer Lisa as a gift so I might receive fair council and perhaps join your honoured ranks." said Daniella humbly.

Lisa nodded. "You may do as you wish with me, Queen."

"Jacinda, take the bimbo and fight her then give her a fuck. After that, take her to be butchered." said the Queen of Valhalla.

Lisa went with Jacinda.

"You make at interesting proposition, welp. Get on your feet and approach my throne." said the Queen of Valhalla.

Daniella got to her feet but kept her head bowed. "What's your name, my Queen?"

"Xephos." said the Queen of Valhalla proudly. "No, Xerxces." She snapped her fingers. "Xena, that's better."

Daniella stared at her.

The Queen of Valhalla coughed awkwardly then beckoned Daniella close.

Daniella walked close.

The Queen of Valhalla whispered. "It's Barbara."

Daniella stared at her.

"You may call me, Mistress." said the Queen of Valhalla with a smirk.

"Actually I was hoping you'd let me." said Daniella sweetly.

The Queen of Valhalla nodded then she stood up and declared. "The Queen In Waiting, The Queen Of The Free is now my concubine! She shall be denied clothes and shall stay by my side whenever possible. Tonight I shall keep her to myself but tomorrow I shall share my new concubine with you all."

Daniella blushed and smiled.

The Queen of Valhalla hooked a finger under Daniella's chin and looked into her eyes. "I know this is probably a trick but I really don't care. You are a dumb slut and I can easily outwit whatever game you have planned so you may be my sweet submissive fuck toy."

“Well, even Bowser goes gokarting with Mario.” said Daniella with a smirk.

The Queen of Valhalla laughed. “Perhaps I could get used to you, toy.” She sat back in her throne and pat her lap.

Daniella approached.

The Queen of Valhalla untied Daniella’s bonds then explored her new property with her hands.

*

October the 2nd 2019 - Late At Night

After being fucked by Lucy, Ricksu, Rachel, Kirsty, Hai, Hotaru, Jacinda and so many others a tall slim brunette approached Daniella to take her turn.

Daniella was tied down loosely beside a chair and a bed and there were a selection of toys and implements on tables nearby so she could be enjoyed however the residents of Valhalla preferred.

“I am Liara Honeyworth.” said the brunette as she put on a strap. “Lie down on the bed please, Princess?”

“Of course, Mistress.” said Daniella obediently as she complied.

“I dated Tom once you know. It was a stupid infatuation but I’m glad you made him happy before the end I am sorry the end happened the way it did.” said Liara.

“Mistress, you wouldn’t happen to know who the woman that could turn into a wolf was?” asked Daniella curiously.

“Well of course I know her, she’s me.” said Liara as she lubed Daniella up.

“Is it possible to learn this power?” asked Daniella, intrigued.

“Perhaps.” said Liara sweetly as she climbed on top of Daniella. “I’ll see if I can’t book some private sessions to teach you.”

“That would be fantastic.” said Daniella.

Liara kissed her on the lips then said. “Now focus on the task at hand, little fuck toy. I am your world, your pleasure comes from me fucking you, alright?”

Daniella blushed and beamed. “Yes, Mistress.”

*

October the 9th 2019 - After The Day’s Harvest

Daniella woke up in the Queen of Valhalla’s personal quarters to find the Queen sharpening a bone dagger with a knife as she watched Daniella sleep.

“Did I wake you?” asked the Queen gently. “I can go if you like.”

“Mistress, I am yours. Do what you like.” said Daniella sleepily as she sat up.

“I’m starting to see why people follow you.” said the Queen as she looked back at the she was sharpening. “T know some of the girls imprinted upon you but it’s more than that. There’s a charisma about you. An intoxicating sweetness with just enough bite to make it stick in the mind.”

“You mean you like bimbos?” asked Daniella with a smirk as she hugged her knees to her.

The Queen stared at her.

Daniella blushed and smiled coyly. “I’m getting spanked for that aren’t I?”

The Queen smirked and gave a nod then she looked back to her dagger. “You might have a point though. I was straight before I came here. I thought I was straight. I had a husband and two kids.” She snorted. “I was quite the good little housewife.”

“I’m sorry...” said Daniella gently.

The Queen stared into space for a moment. “I haven’t thought about them in so long.” She looked to Daniella. “I don’t miss them because I know they will have moved on without me and I have my new life here.”

“You still deserve to know what your kids are getting up to.” said Daniella seriously.

The Queen went back to sharpening her dagger. “A good leader has to set an example. What right do I have to demand my subjects isolate themselves if I received regular updates about my kids?” She snorted. “Probably about your age now.”

A silence settled about them.

Daniella got up and started to look about the Queen’s room.

There was a large bed, a few chests and a couple of wardrobes. One had a mirror set into it.

“Well your quarters are certainly superior to mine.” said Daniella as studied herself in the wardrobe mirror.

“Rewards for good behaviour.” said the Queen dryly.

Daniella nodded as she brushed the hair from her face.

“There’s a brush, some hair clips and hair ties in the chest nearest the right side of the headboard.” said the Queen with a casual glance at Daniella.

“Thank you, Mistress.” said Daniella as she went to fetch the brush.

“It was very brave of you to isolate yourself the way you did. Very noble.” said the Queen as she sharpened the dagger.

Daniella brushed her hair in the mirror.

“I also appreciate that instead of snapping your fingers to call your followers back to you you joined your followers in service to me.” said the Queen.

“I’m only sorry I couldn’t save Tom.” said Daniella bitterly.

“You might have been able to.” said the Queen bluntly. “You could have shot Frank then staged a break out.”

Daniella said nothing as she brushed her hair.

“Instead you chose to have your friend’s abandon you so you could talk to Frank without him hurting them. He killed your boyfriend and you chose to talk to Frank without risk that anybody except you might get hurt.” said the Queen curiously.

Daniella tossed the brush back on the bed. “Frank’s a reasonable man. What he has done to us is abhorrent but there’s a reason they call you the Queen of Valhalla, not the Queen of Hell. This is nowhere near as bad as it could be. Heck, I know major respected companies that treat their employees worse.”

The Queen laughed, set aside what she was using to sharpen the dagger then approached Daniella. “Amazon has a lot of problems but I don’t think it butchers its employees and asks them to drown themselves daily.”

Daniella looked back at the Queen and said dryly. “Amazon doesn’t give its employees, free food, booze and a place to stay.”

The Queen laughed. “Perhaps Frank can go legit after all. I can just see the slogans on the posters now. ‘Valhalla. Sure we’ll butcher you but you’ll get all the mead, bacon and cake you want with a mattress in a shared bedroom to call your own.”

Daniella snorted.

The Queen embraced Daniella from behind then kissed her on the cheek. She looked at Daniella’s reflection in the mirror. “I confess that when I first claimed you as a concubine all I cared about was the power I was exerting over you and the pleasures of rendering my rival into a submissive sex toy.”

“Now?” asked Daniella as she looked at the Queen’s reflection.

“To say I love you would be an overstatement but there are definitely embers of something like it there. I feel it when I watch you sleep, when I see you smile or squirm as you are fucked. There’s something rather adorable about you that I want to protect and care for.” said the Queen.

Daniella blushed and smiled a warm genuine smile.

“I hope you don’t mind but I made this for you.” said the Queen as she presented the dagger.

Daniella took the dagger graciously. “Mistress...”

“Don’t thank me yet.” said the Queen gently. She looked uncomfortable. “I - Well I suppose you can argue that what I did was desecration but -” The Queen sighed. “We don’t leave good resources

to rot in Valhalla do we?"

"No, Mistress." said Daniella seriously.

"So I took Tom's bones. His two largest and most suitable bones, one I had made into a dagger as you can see now, though it still needs sharpening." The Queen frowned. She looked distinctly uncomfortable.

"The other, Mistress?" asked Daniella as she looked at the Queen's reflection with the sweetest and saddest expression on her face.

"I'm having it made into a dildo." said the Queen with a grimace.

Daniella's face lit up with joy. "Mistress, thank you."

The Queen coughed. "I saved his skull and the rest of his bones. I was going to put them on display but as his next of kin you deserve to put them to rest properly."

Daniella turned around and hugged the Queen. "Thank you so much."

The Queen pulled back. "You're not mad?"

Daniella shook her head. "Thanks to you Tom can keep fucking me and butchering me even now."

The Queen laughed then kissed Daniella sweetly.

"I am genuinely so happy, Mistress. Thank you." said Daniella.

The Queen smiled then ran a hand through Daniella's hair and stroked her cheek with a thumb. "I am so glad I got this opportunity to get to know you, Dany." She kissed Daniella again but this time more forcefully and passionately. She tossed Daniella back on the bed and opened the wardrobe. "Now, Princess, lets get you dressed."

Daniella stared. There in the wardrobe was a familiar backless dress, tiara and set of high heeled shoes. She looked up uncertainly at the Queen. "Mistress?"

"Time for the people of Valhalla to be reminded that the Queen In Waiting is back but that this time the Queen of Valhalla is by her side." said the Queen as she offered her hand to Daniella. "Besides it looks better on you."

Daniella accepted the Queen's hand and was pulled to her feet. "This is more than just a dress."

"I know." said the Queen as she looked meaningfully at Daniella. "I don't expect you'll stay with me when this is all over but you can expect me and my people to fight beside you when the end comes."

"What changed?" asked Daniella.

"He killed your boyfriend because you had paper smuggled in to make a suit. You had your social life destroyed so you could offer him peaceful resolution without risk of harm to anyone else." said the Queen seriously.

“How do you know this?” asked Daniella.

The Queen went to her bed, lifted up the mattress and pulled out a file. She opened it. There were black and white CCTV screen shots of Daniella in her suit talking to Frank. There was a transcript of the conversation.

Daniella swallowed.

“The guards aren’t happy, Dany. They haven’t been happy for a while and lately the defenders of Frank have gone silent while there has been more dissent. When Frank killed Tom he made a huge mistake. He killed one of his own men, his own apprentice at that, and had many guards help protect him and take part on the event. Now Tom was a monster with a bad reputation but the guards saw what happened. Tom was not fired, reprimanded or even just executed. He was humiliated and made to suffer so you could be taught a lesson.” explained the Queen.

Daniella looked thoughtful then she regarded the dress. “If I am to wear the dress I shouldn’t just be sat by your throne.”

The Queen nodded. “Lets go see how Artemis is doing on the spit then tour the hall shall we?”

“I think I should love that, Mistress.” said Daniella sweetly.

*

October the 9th 2019 - An Hour Later

The Queen of Valhalla was kissing a passing former partner while Daniella stood nearby with a plate of roast pig.

“Dany!?” cried a familiar voice that Daniella hadn’t heard in a long time.

A tall thin woman with long ginger hair approached as she pulled a huge, muscley and bearded man with her.

“Lena?” asked Daniella, stunned, as she set the plate down by her feet.

“Oh, Dany, it’s so good to see you.” said Lena as she let go of her man and hugged Daniella. She pulled back then looked into Daniella’s eyes. “What happened to you? When I woke up you weren’t anywhere to be seen.”

Daniella was overcome with joy at the reunion as old feelings of lust stirred. Especially as Lena was naked. “It’s good to see you too. How long have you been here?”

“A couple of days. We arrived together and it’s been horrible. Tell me they haven’t slaughtered you as well?” said Lena with anxious energy.

Daniella nodded. “As a matter of fact I’m quite fond of it.” She reached out a hand to Lena’s face and said. “I’m sure you will too, once you’re over the shock of everything. You just need to find the right person to reap you the right way.”

“Well if you’re sure?” asked Lena uncertainly.

“I’m certain.” said Daniella then she leaned in and kissed Lena tenderly on the lips.

Lena smiled. “Please, Dany, can I have some more?”

Daniella kissed Lena on the forehead then took her hands and looked into her eyes. “Things are complicated and there’s something I have to tell you but yes, I would dearly like for us to be together again. If you’ll want to when you know what I know. Now I need to talk to your boyfriend.”

Lena smiled then her eyes slid down her body and she noticed the plate of roast pig. “Do you mind if I have your roast?”

“Oh, please.” said Daniella happily.

Lena bent down and picked up the plate then stood aside.

“Hello, Matthew.” said Daniella as she studied the man with Lena.

Matt had the look of someone who has just seen Jason Voorhees in their mirror. “Hello, Dany.”

“Shall I tell Lena, or will you?” asked Daniella curiously.

“Tell me what?” asked Lena with her mouthful.

“Under the circumstances I feel it’s only fair to leave that privilege to you.” said Matt carefully as he studied Daniella.

“Lena, how many of your and Matt’s girlfriends that suddenly went missing have you seen here?” asked Daniella as she studied Matt.

Lena swallowed her food and looked to Matt. “A few now that you mention it. They all seemed to avoid us like a bad smell. I guessed it was just that we’re new.”

“Matt is the reason I’m here. He abducted me. He gets paid by the man who runs this place. At least he did before he ended up here himself.” said Daniella coldly as she studied Matt.

Lena stared at Matt.

“What?” cried a nearby woman as she turned to look at Matt and elbowed her friend to look at Matt.

“Is she right? Did you abduct Daniella and bring her here?” asked her friend.

More women turned to look at Matt.

“Tell her!” cried Daniella furiously.

A crowd started to form.

Daniella saw Lucy, Riksu, Lisa, Rachel and Kirsty bring up the rear behind Matt.

Matt glanced behind him. He looked profoundly uncomfortable. He looked to Lena.

“Matt, tell me the truth.” said Lena seriously.

“Yes!” cried Matt furiously. “Yes, all right! Yes, I got paid to find suitable women, seduce them and send them off to this place!” He looked to Lena and said coldly. “I used you, Lena. I used you as bait to attract women and make them feel safe with me. I used you and it felt good. I always laughed at how stupid you were for never realising.”

The Queen of Valhalla quietly laid a hand on Daniella’s back and whispered. “I’m with you, whatever you decide.”

Lena stared at Matt. “What!?”

Matt bit his lip then he cried out desperately. “You weren’t at fault! I’m fucked and I know I deserve it but you were innocent, you always were, and for what little it is worth, I did and do genuinely care about you!”

“Thank you!” cried Daniella earnestly. “You could have lied but you were honest and you have shown that you do care about Lena! That matters to me!”

Daniella approached Matt and stroked his face. “I also personally owe you a debt of gratitude. If not for you my life would be so very different.” She kissed Matt sweetly on the lips.

Matt did not reciprocate. He was terrified.

“Relax, Matthew.” said Daniella as she took hold of his hands and looked into his eyes. “I have already gotten my revenge upon you. I visited Frank and asked him to send you and Lena to me.” She looked back to Lena. “I am sorry for sentencing you to this.”

“You had no way to know.” said Lena firmly. “This is a lot to process and I am holding back tears but I am glad I met up with you and I am glad I know the truth. I also trust you and if you say you like this place I am sure I will too.”

Daniella smiled. “Well if you do hate me I will understand but I didn’t just get you sent here out of a need for revenge. I missed you and wanted a chance to get to know you again.”

Lucy coughed. “My Queen...”

“Yes, Lena, this lovely blonde is Lucy. She’s a good friend of mine and a good listener. Shye’ll look after you and help you adjust and process how you feel.” said Daniella.

Lena smiled at Daniella then she crossed the circle and hugged Daniella. “I am so utterly sorry for my part in all this.” She looked to Matt and bit her lips as she reached out to him. “I don’t know how to feel right now but we will talk later when I have had a think. If you ever want a hope of getting together with me again you will go willingly and cooperate with whatever these women ask.” She looked to Daniella. “Do what you want with him. That includes butchering him and cooking him. He deserves it.”

Lena walked into Lucy’s welcoming arms.

Kirsty wordlessly waked off with Lena and Lucy.

The Queen of Valhalla approached Daniella as Riksu, Lisa and Rachel approached from behind

Matt.

“You sent a man to Valhalla?” asked the Queen of Valhalla.

Daniella nodded. “There should be planes of men arriving now and for another three months.”

The Queen of Valhalla smiled then looked at Matt’s cock. “I think the first penis to be eaten in Valhalla should go to the Queen Of The Free.”

Matt swallowed.

“My Queen, I believe it is only fitting that the one true Queen of Valhalla does the honours of fluffing up, cutting and cooking the first cock of Valhalla.” said Daniella sweetly as she studied Matt’s cock. “Though of course I will accept my meal with gratitude.”

“What a fantastic idea, I’d be honoured.” said the Queen of Valhalla as she looked to Daniella with pride.

“Afterwards he should go on the spit and we should make fine weapons from his bones for the Queen of Valhalla to wield.” said Riksu.

The Queen of Valhalla beamed. “I see why the Princess values you so much. That’s a fantastic idea. I’ll have the guards put him up there once his cock has been removed.”

“This calls for a celebration. Rachel, would you be so kind as to be the meal for the banquet?” asked Daniella.

“Of course, Mistress.” said Rachel with a huge grin.

Lisa smiled then leaned close and whispered. “As it’s a celebration perhaps I could be a sex toy for the night?”

“Like when the Queen offered to share me with her subjects?” suggested Daniella curiously.

“Exactly.” said Lisa gleefully. “With your permission, of course?”

“Granted.” said Daniella sweetly.

The Queen of Valhalla pulled Lisa close and kissed her on the forehead then said. “That is a delightful idea. I’ll arrange to have you minded and restrained for the duration.”

Lisa beamed. “I look forward to it.”

The Queen of Valhalla looked to Riksu. “While I am busy, would you kindly like my princess on a tour of Valhalla and see she is well cared for. I’ll make sure the cock is ready for your return.”

Riksu looked to Daniella and beamed. “It would be an honour.”

*

October the 9th - Just Before Midnight

There was a discarded plate to one side. Riksu lay on a tarpaulin on the Queen of Valhalla's bed, her head had been snapped and there were bite marks and chunks missing from her cheeks, breasts, arms and legs.

Daniella's mouth and hands were covered in blood as she stood up. "I'm full. I couldn't eat another bite."

The Queen of Valhalla laughed from her chair.

"I know she's only small but she's so rich. I mean I love her taste but I just can't eat any more." said Daniella defensively as she looked to the Queen of Valhalla.

"You got your happy ending." said the Queen of Valhalla as she stood up and approached Daniella. "You got to have your girlfriend and eat her too." She took hold of Daniella's right hand with her left and ran her right hand through Daniella's hair. "Riksu loves you, Princess, and you even have a new bit of rough to dominate you."

"So this is the part where you kill me to stop me posing a danger to you right?" asked Daniella with a smirk.

The Queen of Valhalla grinned then she kissed Daniella tenderly and stroked her cheek. "I'll let Riksu recover then take her as my concubine in your stead."

"I'm not going anywhere." said Daniella seriously.

The Queen of Valhalla stopped smiling then she took hold of Daniella's other hand. "You're going to the kitchen to meet Frank."

"I don't have to go." said Daniella uncertainly.

"Yes, you do. You just sent Lena here so even though you know it's almost certainly a trap you're going to meet Frank." said the Queen of Valhalla earnestly.

Daniella bit her lip and looked away.

"Just remember that you are not alone and I am on your side." said the Queen of Valhalla.

Daniella looked nervously at the Queen.

The Queen of Valhalla took to one knee and looked up at her. "I pledge my life in service to you, Queen Of The Free."

Daniella swallowed. "Mistress?"

"I will find another girl like you and make her mine. You have Riksu, Lisa and Rachel and you belong to Artemis. Now, go before I change my mind." said the Queen of Valhalla.

"Thank you." said Daniella then she turned and started to walk away.

The Queen of Valhalla stood up and smiled as she watched Daniella leave.

*

October the 10th 2019

Daniella arrived in the kitchen and noticed her reflection in the knife. The reflection changed to that of a familiar middle aged woman. She winked at Daniella.

Frank appeared in the reflection. “Stupid bitch.”

“Come now, Frank, is that anyway to start diplomatic proceedings.” said Daniella as she turned to face him.

Frank was flanked by armed guards in masks.

“You are going to come with me.” said Frank firmly.

“That was the agreement.” said Daniella casually as she approached.

Frank backed off.

“Lets see now you’ve already abducted me, killed the man I love and had me butchered repeatedly. Oh and put on a spit for month. Mustn’t forget that.” said Daniella casually as she followed him. “Are you going to rape me next?”

Frank looked furious.

Daniella watched the walkway extend down from above and mused. “Perhaps you’ll order your men to gang rape me? Of course the problem with that plan is that I’d consent to it because I love a good hard fuck by a powerful man. So what’s the point in raping me if I consent? Where’s the power the humilation and the sadistic pleasure if I love every minute of it and beg for more?”

Frank went red in the face.

Daniella clicked her fingers. “Maybe you’ll try to rape me yourself?” She smirked. “Trying to physically dominate a young wereshark will definitely go well for you.”

Frank led Daniella through walkways and corridors as she eagerly discussed and dismissed all the ways Frank might try to punish her or torture her.

Finally Frank led Daniella down to a cave underground.

“We discovered this while excavating for places to expand years ago. It’s a natural cave formation. There is no route in or out other than the way we came.” explained Frank coldly.

Daniella noticed a large glass window sat to one since and a concrete mixer.

“You are going to enter the pit and we are going to seal you in.” explained Frank as he studied Daniella. He didn’t sound proud or pleased. He sounded disgusted. “You will slowly suffocate to death as you use up the breathable air and then you will start to starve to death. Guards will be watching through the window and if you do not remain or try to escape will order your friends killed.”

Daniella nodded. “I have to admit I’m impressed.” She looked to Frank and smiled. “You found a

loophole to satisfy your conscience and prevent having to ask your guards to test their consciences by asking them to shoot me."

Frank stared at her and said desperately. "You left me no choice."

"No, I suppose I didn't." said Daniella quietly then she waked into the cave and sat down on the floor.

"Seal her in and have her guarded at all times." ordered Frank. "Anyone that doesn't goes to Valhalla."

*

October the 10th 2019 - Five Minutes Later

The Queen of Valhalla sat on her chair and looked sadly at Riksu as she healed.

There was a flash of green then Kate appeared.

"Let me guess, you're a friend of Dany and she's fallen into a trap?" asked the Queen of Valhalla dryly.

Kate nodded. "I've got a spaceship in orbit. I'm going to displace up people Dany can trust and arm them. Can you make sure Valhalla is ready?"

"Of course. Take Riksu, she'd never forgive me if you didn't." said the Queen of Valhalla.

*

October the 10th - Twenty Five Minutes Later

Lucy, Lena and Kirsty lay together as Lena slept.

There was a flash of green light and the three were suddenly in a white room.

Lucy leapt to her feet.

"Where are we?" asked Kirsty.

The door opened and Jake entered. He was dressed like a guard. Riksu was with him, also dressed like a guard.

"Jake, what are you doing here?" asked Lucy.

"Well I left with my husband and we dumped a lot of information about the facility that I was able to smuggle out but this lady called Kate appeared in a flash of light with Riksu and they explained that Dany is in danger so here I am." said Jake.

Lena looked about. "What did I miss?"

"You three need to shower and get changed." said Riksu seriously. "We're going to free Dany."

*

October the 10th - Three Hours Later

Frank was working in his office at his desk. He'd moved it from under the vent after Daniella had surprised him.

The intercom blared. "Sir, it's Dany."

"What's she doing?" asked Frank nervously.

"She's singing."

"Mobilise every guard and send them at the cave entrance I'll be right there." said Frank seriously.

*

October the 10th - Thirty Minutes Later

Frank stormed in to the cave entrance to and watched in the window as Daniella sang.

Daniella's voice sounded deep as she sang "Gfaxxy a come, Gfaxxy a come, a bubble gum."

Frank was reassured by the presence of so many armed guards. He called out. "Dany, what are you doing!?"

"This loneliness is killing me!" sung Daniella as her voice raised in pitch and she stood up. She turned to face Frank and bellowed. "Don't you know that you're toxic!?" She strode up to the glass and bellowed triumphantly. "Go on, baby, hit me one more time!" Daniella lashed out with a right hook at the glass.

As Frank watched Daniella's right arm transformed into the fur covered and clawed muscular arm of a wereshark. She easily shattered the glass and her arm transformed back into her normal human arm.

"I spent a month learning to control reality from the Farsh-nuke. On reflection some of those lessons are quite applicable to the task of controlling my own transformations." said Daniella coldly.

"You are going to get back back in there and wait while we seal up the entrance with concrete or I will order Lisa killed." said Frank.

"That's going to be a bit difficult to do." said Lisa as he removed her guard's mask and helmet.

Riksu, Lucy, Lena, Kirsty, Hai and Hotaru similarly removed their masks and helmets.

Then Jake removed his helmet and levelled his gun at Frank. "You've lost, Frank. She's won."

Frank pulled out his phone. "Delta shift, this is Frank. On my mark I want you to start exterminating the weresylphs."

"Frank, this is the Queen of Valhalla. The members of Delta shift that have not joined us are now

lunch. I suggest you agree to the Queen Of The Free's terms."

Frank snarled but he tried again. "Gamma shift."

"Let me save you some time, Frank. I am Magpie, I liberated Dany in the first place and I've been infiltrating your guards for a month or so. There is no group of guards that is not now loyal to Dany."

Frank stared at the phone.

"Stupid bitch." said Daniella dryly as she held out her hand to receive the phone.

Frank handed it over. "You should know that I called for reinforcements from Geoff before I even went to meet you."

Daniella angled the phone so Frank couldn't see then pressed random buttons and called. "Kate, do you have visual of any planes in bound?"

"Four planes, Dany. From what I can tell at least one of them is large and armoured." came Kate's reply from the speakers of the phone.

Daniella didn't bother to ask how she could achieve that effect. "Thank you, Kate. Have a ground team waiting for us and tell Magpie and the Queen of Valhalla they are to meet us at the airport."

"As you wish, Dany." said Kate.

Daniella turned off the phone then looked to Frank. "You will lead us to the airport."

*

Chapter 26
They Think It's All Over

October the 10th 2019 - 6 am

Daniella, Riksu, Lucy, Lisa, Lena, Kirsty, Hai and Hotaru were waiting on the launchpad with Frank held at gunpoint by Jake.

The Queen of Valhalla and her loyal harem stood with Magpie and her unit of guards.

Kate ran up to Daniella with Rachel and Artemis. Rachel had been dressed in a pink flowery wrap dress while Artemis wore as three piece suit.

"Forgive our late arrival." said Kate.

"I'm glad you're here." said Daniella with a grin as she surveyed the new women.

The planes landed.

Armed guards stepped out from the back of one plane and escorted a tall handsome bearded man to the welcome group.

“Geoff.” said the Queen of Valhalla stunned.

“I said I’d come didn’t I?” asked Geoff with a winning smile as he looked to Frank. Then he looked to Daniella. “Now, sweet Dany, be a good girl for Daddy and stop with this nonsense.”

Daniella just stared at him.

“That won’t work dad because she imprinted on me and her friends imprinted on her.” said Magpie as she approached.

“Maggie, don’t tell me you got wrapped up in all this?” asked Geoff, concerned.

Frank coughed and looked away awkwardly.

“Your business partner wanted leverage so he had me abducted. He hoped that once I was a sylph he could control me but he didn’t count on one thing. I was already a sylph so I couldn’t be turned into one and couldn’t imprint on anybody.” said Magpie.

“I’m sorry, what?” asked Daniella.

“It took me a while to find out everything but Dad here imprinted on my mother and -” Magpie used air quotes “‘rescued’ her. Of course he named me after his favourite politician Margaret Thatcher and was then an absentee father while my poor mum went slowly feral so I went badly off the rails and got into doing crime and drugs.”

“Where’s your mum now?” asked Daniella.

Magpie looked to Geoff.

“Probably back in Glasgow with the rest of the girls I liberated.” said Geoff awkwardly.

Four people approached from one of the other planes that had landed.

“The name is Sherlock Holmes, Britain’s foremost investigator for more than a century, that’s my husband Doctor John Watson, that’s our handler Z and the lady in the blue coat is Princess Bridgette of the Royal Family of the United Kingdom of England, Wales, Scotland and Northern Ireland. To use the colloquial vernacular, you’re nicked, mate.”

“I can’t be arrested. This isn’t your jurisdiction.” said Geoff incredulously.

“I think you’ll find that I just colonised this island.” said Princess Bridgette cheerfully then she gave a nod to the Queen of Valhalla and Daniella. “Though in accordance with colonial practices we will be appointing a local leader to manage affairs for us and we will respect local customs and traditions.”

Kate gave a nod to Z.

“Oh and the plane on the left is filled with humanitarian workers while the plane on the right is filled with journalists and the media so they can report on the island though we did bring along one other person.” explained Z.

Jake put down his gun. “Tad.”

A handsome Japanese man approached carrying a small dog. “Rose missed her Daddy.”

“So what happens now?” asked Riksu.

“A new day dawns.” said Daniella then she looked to Riksu and asked casually. “Riksu, would you marry me?”

“So long as we can keep Rachel and Lisa as our submissive sex pets.” said Riksu with a smirk.

“Always.” said Daniella.